

Open Research Online

The Open University's repository of research publications and other research outputs

Temporal and Geographical Variation in Martian Surface Dust Lifting Processes

Thesis

How to cite:

Chapman, Rhian (2018). Temporal and Geographical Variation in Martian Surface Dust Lifting Processes. PhD thesis The Open University.

For guidance on citations see [FAQs](#).

© 2018 The Author



<https://creativecommons.org/licenses/by-nc-nd/4.0/>

Version: Version of Record

Link(s) to article on publisher's website:
<http://dx.doi.org/doi:10.21954/ou.ro.0000e07d>

Copyright and Moral Rights for the articles on this site are retained by the individual authors and/or other copyright owners. For more information on Open Research Online's data [policy](#) on reuse of materials please consult the policies page.

oro.open.ac.uk

Temporal and Geographical Variation in Martian Surface Dust Lifting Processes

Rhian Chapman

MPhys Astrophysics

Submitted for the degree of
Doctor of Philosophy



School of Physical Sciences

The Open University

June 2018

Abstract

Numerical experiments were completed examining the variability of key aspects of the Martian dust cycle and investigating their importance in predicting conditions for spacecraft atmospheric descent and landing.

The dust cycle – lifting, transportation and deposition – is a significant Martian climate cycle. The geographical and temporal variation in dust lifting processes were investigated using a Martian Global Circulation Model.

The geographical representation of Martian dust lifting by wind stress was used to explore the experimental impact of changes in model resolution. It was found that increasing the resolution improved the model’s geographical representation of observed dust lifting regions, such as resolving important storm-forming regions in the northern hemisphere. This improvement was unanticipated in the case of changes in vertical resolution, and the horizontal resolution work identified an important length scale for dust lifting (of the order of 100 kilometres).

The temporal variation of a dust lifting process was investigated through experiments focusing on the diurnal variability of Martian dust devils (small-scale convective vortices). This research compared results with published lander and rover observations and found that dust devils were more active during morning hours than anticipated, suggesting that the generally accepted description of dust devil behaviour on Mars is incomplete.

Predictions were made of the atmospheric and near-surface environment encountered by the ESA ExoMars Schiaparelli landing module. The experiments produced a reasonable representation of atmospheric quantities along the descent trajectory and were able to generate similar low-altitude wind fields to those reported by the spacecraft. The global-scale model also out-performed a higher resolution mesoscale model.

These findings are significant in the field of Martian climate modelling, are important for the planning of Martian dust devil observation campaigns and future missions to the planet’s surface, and will also be relevant to researchers operating atmospheric models for other planetary bodies.

Acknowledgements

I want to thank my supervisors, Stephen Lewis, Matt Balme and Liam Steele, firstly for giving me the opportunity to undertake this PhD, and secondly for advising me and supporting me through it. I genuinely believe that my supervision team was the best I could have had.

Thank you to Vic Pearson, for our cheerful coffee-and-catch-up meetings. Thank you to the wider members of the OU School of Physical Sciences – particularly the administration and support staff in Robert Hooke for their willingness to provide assistance whenever I needed it, and to the Linux support team for fixing the system whenever it broke. Thank you to Lori-Ann for her excellent proof-reading.

Thank you to my parents, for their never-ending support, and to my sister, all our lives. Thank you to my ‘grown-up’ friends, for not teasing me more than was appropriate through my return sojourn in studentdom: Russ, Siân, Adam, Rob and Anna, Robert and Lucy (and Iris), Lydia and Beckie; Katie, Jon and Alex; Lee (and Joshua).

Thank you to the new friends I have made upon becoming a student again, including – but not limited to – Ashley, Jimmy, Peter W, Amy, Jack, Frances, Alex, Rachael, Pegg, Shannon, Paul G, Paul S, Chris, Peter and Leanne, Stacy. You all helped me through.

This thesis is dedicated to Emily, who was always working to better herself.

Contents

List of Figures	xi
List of Tables	xv
List of Abbreviations	xviii
List of Publications	xx
1 Introduction	1
1.1 Research Questions	2
1.2 Document Preliminaries	5
1.3 Document Guide	7
2 Martian Atmospheric Dust	9
2.1 The Importance of Martian Dust	9
2.2 Dust Particles and Distribution	11
2.3 Dust Storms	14
2.4 Dust Devils	20
2.5 Other Dust Lifting Phenomena	23
2.6 Dust and Spacecraft	24
3 Modelling Dust in the Martian Atmosphere	27
3.1 The Mars Global Circulation Model	27
3.2 MGCM Dynamics	28
3.2.1 Vertical Coordinate	30
3.3 Physical Subroutines	30

3.3.1	Tracer Transport	31
3.3.2	Atmospheric Turbulence	32
3.3.3	Radiative Flux	33
3.4	Atmospheric Dust	34
3.4.1	The Dust Particles	34
3.4.2	Dust Distribution	36
3.5	Dust Lifting	37
3.5.1	Near-Surface Wind Stress	38
3.5.2	Dust Devils	40
3.6	Model Resolution	42
3.7	Experimental Procedure	46
4	Wind-Stress Dust Lifting and Model Resolution	47
4.1	Introduction	47
4.2	Method	49
4.3	Results	52
4.3.1	Changing the Horizontal Resolution	52
4.3.2	Changing the Vertical Resolution	59
4.3.3	Summary	59
4.4	Discussion	64
4.4.1	Comparison with Observations	64
4.4.2	Dust Lifting in Horizontal Resolution Experiments	67
4.4.3	Dust Lifting in Vertical Resolution Experiments	78
4.5	Highest Horizontal Resolutions	90
4.6	Summary and Recommendations	96
5	Diurnal Variation in Martian Dust Devil Activity	99
5.1	Introduction	99
5.2	Method	101
5.3	Peak Dust Devil Lifting Time	101
5.3.1	Variability of Individual Gridboxes	113
5.3.2	Variability Resulting from the Parameterisation	114
5.4	Comparison With Observations	123
5.4.1	Orbital Observations	123

5.4.2	Surface Observations	123
5.5	Discussion and Summary	133
6	Case Study: ExoMars EDM Landing Site	139
6.1	Introduction	139
6.2	Data Sources and Method	140
6.2.1	Spacecraft Data	140
6.2.2	Models	143
6.3	Results and Discussion	147
6.3.1	Atmospheric Temperature and Density Profiles	147
6.3.2	Wind Speed and Direction	164
6.3.3	Surface Dust Processes	174
6.3.4	Models Comparison	182
6.4	Summary	185
6.4.1	Recommendations	187
7	Summary and Conclusions	189
7.1	Overview of Research	189
7.1.1	Geographical Representation of Dust Lifting	190
7.1.2	Temporal Representation of Dust Lifting	191
7.1.3	Landing Site Case Study	192
7.2	Conclusions and Recommendations	194
7.2.1	Question 1: Does the model exhibit an accurate, robust geographical representation of dust lifting?	194
7.2.2	Question 2: Can the temporal variability of Martian dust lifting be deduced from terrestrial processes?	196
7.2.3	Question 3: Is the model's prediction of the environment at a selected landing site accurate enough to aid mission planning?	198
7.3	Further work	199
7.4	Final Words	203
	Bibliography	205

List of Figures

1.1	Diagram of Martian solar longitude	6
2.1	Zonal mean dust optical depth through multiple years	13
2.2	Variation in altitude of the top of the dust haze	15
2.3	Mars Color Imager (MARCI) captures of dust events	16
2.4	Mars Orbital Camera (MOC) image of a large dust storm	17
2.5	Images of Mars captured by NASA's Mars Global Surveyor	19
2.6	Dust devils imaged from orbit and the surface	21
2.7	Dust devil tracks	22
3.1	Dust particle scattering properties	35
3.2	Example plots of visible optical depth	37
3.3	Comparison of model gridbox sizes across resolution	43
3.4	Example vertical 25-layer sigma scheme	44
3.5	Mid-layer altitudes within an example 25 vertical layer scheme	45
4.1	Altitudes of layer mid-points across vertical resolutions	50
4.2	Maps of dust lifting by NSW within a T31(L25) experiment	53
4.3	Maps of dust lifting by NSW within a T42 experiment	54
4.4	Maps of dust lifting by NSW within a T63 experiment	55
4.5	Maps of dust lifting by NSW within a T85 experiment	56
4.6	Dust lifting rate at an example surface location	57
4.7	Dust mass lifted globally, by horizontal resolution	57
4.8	Dust mass lifted annually, by horizontal resolution	58
4.9	Maps of dust lifting by NSW in a (T31)L35 experiment	60

4.10	Maps of dust lifting by NSWS in an L60 experiment	61
4.11	Maps of dust lifting by NSWS in an L100 experiment	62
4.12	Dust mass lifted globally, by vertical resolution	63
4.13	Dust mass lifted annually, by vertical resolution	63
4.14	Locations of dust storm observations through MY24-30	66
4.15	Example plot of the threshold velocity	68
4.16	Example plot of the friction velocity	68
4.17	Surface dust lifting through $L_S = 30-60^\circ$	71
4.18	Peak near-surface wind speeds through $L_S = 30-60^\circ$	72
4.19	Surface dust lifting through $L_S = 210-240^\circ$	73
4.20	Peak near-surface wind speeds through $L_S = 210-240^\circ$	74
4.21	Box-and-whisker peak near-surface wind speeds, $L_S = 30-60^\circ$. .	77
4.22	Box-and-whisker peak near-surface wind speeds, $L_S = 210-240^\circ$.	77
4.23	Surface dust lifting through the period $L_S = 210-240^\circ$	79
4.24	Surface dust lifting through the period $L_S = 240-270^\circ$	80
4.25	Difference in peak near-surface wind speeds, $L_S = 210-240^\circ$. . .	82
4.26	Difference in peak near-surface wind speeds, $L_S = 240-270^\circ$. . .	83
4.27	Global topography plot with locations of vertical profiles	84
4.28	Vertical profiles of peak wind speed	85
4.29	Near-surface peak wind speed at the base of vertical profiles . . .	86
4.30	Partial-height peak wind speed vertical profiles	88
4.31	Partial-height peak wind speed vertical Profile E	89
4.32	Dust mass lifted globally (T127)	91
4.33	Dust mass lifted annually (T127)	91
4.34	Maps of dust lifting (T127)	92
4.35	Dust mass lifted globally (T170)	94
4.36	Maps of dust lifting (T170)	95
5.1	Global map of the diurnal timing of peak dust devil lifting . . .	102
5.2	Diurnal timing of peak dust devil lifting, $L_S = 0-180^\circ$	103
5.3	Diurnal timing of peak dust devil lifting, $L_S = 180-360^\circ$	104
5.4	Diurnal timing of peak dust devil lifting, $L_S = 0-180^\circ$ (high dust loading)	106

5.5	Diurnal timing of peak dust devil lifting, $L_S = 180\text{-}360^\circ$ (high dust loading)	107
5.6	Diurnal timing of peak dust devil lifting, $L_S = 0\text{-}180^\circ$ (T42) . . .	108
5.7	Diurnal timing of peak dust devil lifting, $L_S = 180\text{-}360^\circ$ (T42) .	109
5.8	Diurnal timing of peak dust devil lifting, $L_S = 0\text{-}180^\circ$ (varying surface roughness)	111
5.9	Diurnal timing of peak dust devil lifting, $L_S = 180\text{-}360^\circ$ (varying surface roughness)	112
5.10	Dust devil lifting within individual gridboxes	113
5.11	Example η curve	115
5.12	Near-surface atmospheric density at two locations	116
5.13	Surface temperature, near-surface atmospheric temperature . . .	117
5.14	Near-surface wind speeds and dust devil lifting within an individual gridbox	118
5.15	Near-surface wind speeds within individual gridboxes	119
5.16	Diurnal timing of peak near-surface wind speeds, $L_S = 0\text{-}180^\circ$. .	120
5.17	Diurnal timing of peak near-surface wind speeds, $L_S = 180\text{-}360^\circ$	121
5.18	Global map of near-surface wind speeds, dust devil lifting and surface-atmosphere temperature difference	122
5.19	Map identifying locations of landers and rovers	124
5.20	Hourly dust devil lifting at four lander/rover sites	126
5.21	Hourly dust devil lifting at the MER Spirit site	127
6.1	EDM Schiaparelli planned landing site	141
6.2	EDM Schiaparelli planned landing ellipse	141
6.3	Reconstructed descent trajectory of the EDM	142
6.4	MGCM vertical profiles of atmospheric temperature	144
6.5	Comparison of EDM data with MCD temperature profiles	148
6.6	MGCM atmospheric temperature profiles, varying dust loadings .	149
6.7	Comparison of MGCM and EDM temperature profiles	150
6.8	Comparison of MMM and EDM temperature profiles.	151
6.9	Comparison of model and EDM density profiles	152

6.10 Comparison of model and EDM density profiles below ~ 50 km altitude	154
6.11 Percentage deviation of model data from EDM density data . . .	155
6.12 Comparison of MGCM, EDM and MCS temperature profiles . . .	157
6.13 Comparison of model and EDM density profiles below ~ 30 km altitude (including proposed mean)	159
6.14 Comparison of model and EDM temperature profiles below ~ 30 km altitude (including proposed mean)	160
6.15 Percentage deviation of model data from EDM temperature data	161
6.16 Comparison of EDM wind data with model profiles	165
6.17 Model and EDM vertical profiles of wind magnitude and speeds .	166
6.18 Vector plot of wind profiles	168
6.19 EDM wind magnitude data, shown in 3D and from above	169
6.20 Model wind profiles, EDM mean wind profiles	171
6.21 EDM smoothed, mean, and residual profiles	172
6.22 Near-surface wind magnitudes at the EDM site	175
6.23 Modelled NSW dust lifting at the EDM site	176
6.24 Modelled dust devil dust lifting rates at the EDM site	178
6.25 Maximum dust devil lifting rates around the EDM site	179
6.26 Maximum dust devil lifting rates around the EDM site (T85) . .	180
6.27 Modelled dust devil lifting in the vicinity of the EDM site	181

List of Tables

3.1	MGCM resolutions used in this research	43
3.2	Approximate timestep lengths by model resolution	45
4.1	MGCM horizontal resolutions used in this chapter	49
4.2	MGCM vertical resolutions used in this chapter	50
4.3	Locations of the studied vertical profiles	84
4.4	Very high horizontal MGCM resolutions used in this chapter . .	90
5.1	Locations of landers and rovers	124
5.2	MGCM dust devil lifting compared with dust devil observations	132
6.1	MGCM and MMM resolutions used in this chapter	146

List of Abbreviations

AMELIA	Atmospheric Mars Entry and Landing Investigations and Analysis
AMR	Above MOLA Radius
AOPP	Atmospheric, Oceanic and Planetary Physics department, Oxford
AR-WRF	Advanced Research Weather Research and Forecasting
CaSSIS	Colour and Stereo Surface Imaging System
CBL	Convective Boundary Layer
CFL	Courant-Friedrichs-Lewy
DREAMS	Dust characterization, Risk assessment and Environment Analyzer on the Martian Surface
EDM	Entry Demonstrator Module
ESA	European Space Agency
GCM	Global Circulation Model
GFDL	Geophysical Fluid Dynamics Laboratory
HiRISE	High Resolution Imaging Science Experiment
HRSC	High Resolution Stereo Camera
IQR	Interquartile range
JPL	Jet Propulsion Laboratory
LMD	Laboratoire de Météorologie Dynamique
LTE	Local Thermal Equilibrium
MARCI	Mars Color Imager
MCD	Mars Climate Database
MCS	Mars Climate Sounder
MER	Mars Exploration Rover
MEx	Mars Express

MGCM	Mars Global Circulation Model
MGS	Mars Global Surveyor
MMM	Mars Mesoscale Model
MOC	Mars Orbital Camera
MOLA	Mars Orbital Laser Altimeter
MRO	Mars Reconnaissance Orbiter
MSL	Mars Science Laboratory
MY	Mars Year
NASA	National Aeronautic and Space Administration
NCAR	National Center for Atmospheric Research
NH	Northern Hemisphere
NSWS	Near-surface wind stress
RMSD	Root Mean Square Deviation
SH	Southern Hemisphere
SI	Système International (d'unité) / International System of Units
TES	Thermal Emission Spectrometer
TGO	Trace Gas Orbiter
UKSA	UK Space Agency
VL2	Viking Lander 2

List of Publications

Journal Publications

Chapman, R. M.; Lewis, S. R.; Balme, M. and Steele, L. J. (2017), **Diurnal Variation in Martian Dust Devil Activity**. *Icarus*, 292, pp.154-167. DOI 10.1016/j.icarus.2017.01.003.

Conference Items

Chapman, R. M.; Lewis, S. R.; Balme, M. and Steele, L. J. (2018), **Comparison of Global-Scale and Mesoscale Modelling of Vertical Profiles in the Martian Atmosphere: How Does Model Resolution Impact Predictions of Conditions at Mission Landing Sites?** *49th Lunar and Planetary Science Conference*, 19-23 March 2018, Texas, USA.

Chapman, R. M.; Lewis, S. R.; Balme, M. and Steele, L. J. (2017), **Wind-Stress Dust Lifting in a Mars Global Circulation Model: Representation across Resolutions**. *AGU Fall Meeting 2017*, 11-15 December 2017, New Orleans, LA, USA.

Chapman, R. M.; Lewis, S. R.; Balme, M. and Steele, L. J. (2017), **Impact of Global Model Resolution on the Representation of Martian Wind-Stress Dust Lifting**. *1st British Planetary Science Congress*, 3-5 December 2017, Glasgow, UK.

Chapman, R. M.; Lewis, S. R.; Balme, M. and Steele, L. J. (2016), **The Effect of Model Resolution on Wind-Stress Dust Lifting Within the LMD/UK Mars Global Circulation Model**. *6th International Workshop*

on the Mars Atmosphere: Modelling and Observations, 17-20 January 2017, Granada, Spain.

Chapman, R. M.; Lewis, S. R.; Balme, M. and Steele, L. J. (2016), **How Do Martian Dust Devils Vary Throughout the Sol?** *AGU Fall Meeting 2016*, 12-17 December 2016, San Francisco, CA, USA.

Chapman, R. M.; Lewis, S. R.; Balme, M. and Steele, L. J. (2016), **Martian Dust Devils: When to Watch for Them.** *UKPF 13th Annual Early Career Scientists' Meetings*, 22 January 2016, Leicester, UK.

Chapman, R. M.; Lewis, S. R.; Balme, M. and Steele, L. J. (2015), **Investigating the Martian atmosphere using the ExoMars 2016 lander.** *4th UK in Aurora Programme Meeting*, 15 May 2015, London, UK.

Chapter 1

Introduction

Martian atmospheric dust is a crucial component in the climate cycles of Mars (e.g. *Gierasch and Goody*, 1971; *Haberle et al.*, 1982; *Kahn et al.*, 1992; *Zurek et al.*, 1992; *Lewis et al.*, 1999; *Read and Lewis*, 2004; *Kahre et al.*, 2017). Understanding the dust cycle of lifting, transportation and deposition, is key to understanding Martian long-term weather and climate patterns (e.g. *Zurek*, 1978; *Zurek et al.*, 1992; *Pankine and Ingersoll*, 2004; *Fenton et al.*, 2007). One strong driver behind the desire to improve our knowledge of the dust cycle, and its impact on the planet's climate, is the importance of being able to predict the atmospheric environment that will be encountered by future missions to the surface of Mars (e.g. *Petrosyan et al.*, 2011; *Vasavada et al.*, 2012).

The phenomena that lift dust from the surface into the Martian atmosphere are fundamental to the dust cycle. Observations of Martian dust lifting events are currently constrained either in space or time – or both. Surface observations from landers and rovers are necessarily restricted in geographical scope, the amount of information that can be returned is constrained by data transmission rates, and missions have a limited life-span¹. Orbital observations are often limited temporally: while an orbiting spacecraft may have a longer nominal mission than a lander, platform orbits and instrument pointing affect the timing of data capture (such as the polar orbit of the Mars Global Surveyor spacecraft restricting Mars Orbiter Camera images to afternoon hours, *Cantor et al.* 2006),

¹With the possible exception of NASA's Opportunity rover.

and these spacecraft are at a great distance from any surface processes being studied and their ability to resolve those processes is consequently constrained.

Variations in the behaviour of dust lifting phenomena can therefore currently be most comprehensively explored through numerical computer experiments. The output of any such experiments must be compared with local observations made by landers and rovers, and with regional and global observations made by orbiting spacecraft, to test the fidelity of the model, the reliability of the experiments, and the accuracy of the results. The better the representation of dust lifting within a model, the better the representation of the dust cycle and of the consequent impact the dust has on the planet's climate, and the more pertinent the results of any experiments completed with that model.

This work uses the parameterisations of dust lifting processes embedded within a global atmospheric model to: (i) investigate the temporal variation of those processes, (ii) test the geographical fidelity of this aspect of the modelled dust cycle, (iii) explore the robustness of the model, (iv) test predictions of the atmospheric conditions and near-surface dust events likely to be encountered by a spacecraft during the mission's entry, descent and landing.

1.1 Research Questions

This thesis will discuss the variability in the dust lifting processes of the Martian dust cycle, and the impact of atmospheric dust on model predictions of local conditions during spacecraft descent and landing. This work will answer three research questions:

1. Does the model exhibit an accurate geographical representation of dust lifting, and is this representation robust?
2. Can the temporal variability of Martian dust lifting be deduced by comparison with terrestrial processes?
3. Is the model's prediction of the atmospheric and near-surface environment at a selected landing site accurate enough to aid mission planning?

51 The questions were approached through three research topics:

52 1. Geographical Representation of Martian Dust Lifting

53 To test the robustness of the model’s geographical representation of dust
 54 lifting, experiments were completed with a focus on the lifting process
 55 associated closely with dust storms: dust lifting by the near-surface wind
 56 stress induced by large scale winds (Section 2.3). These experiments were
 57 designed to test the model’s response to changes in the experimental setup
 58 rather than changes in the physics of the process being modelled. Simu-
 59 lations were completed across a range of model resolutions, exploring the
 60 impact upon results of changes to both horizontal and vertical resolutions.

61 While it has been reported that the resolution at which global experiments
 62 are completed will affect results (e.g. *Toigo et al.*, 2012; *Mulholland et al.*,
 63 2015), few published studies have considered how dust lifting parameteri-
 64 sations are specifically affected, particularly with regard to the geograph-
 65 ical representation of dust lifting: such studies consider only a limited
 66 portion of the year, or consider the total area affected without detailing
 67 the geographical distribution (*Takahashi et al.*, 2008, 2011b). In addition,
 68 studies exploring how varying model resolution can impact results often
 69 change the horizontal resolution while keeping the vertical resolution con-
 70 stant (e.g. *Takahashi et al.*, 2011a; *Toigo et al.*, 2012). Understanding
 71 precisely how changes to model resolution affect the representation of this
 72 key aspect of the dust cycle is important for improving model fidelity, and
 73 hence for running accurate experiments and obtaining valid and useful
 74 results, with the aim of furthering Martian atmospheric science.

75 The hypothesis tested herein was that more dust would be lifted as hori-
 76 zontal resolution is increased, but that changes to the vertical resolution
 77 would only minimally impact the amount of dust lifted. An increase in
 78 modelled horizontal resolution allows a more detailed representation of
 79 the planet’s surface properties, including topography and small-scale vari-
 80 ations in albedo and thermal inertia, which provides an improved repre-
 81 sentation of local variability within the near-surface wind and a better

capture of small-scale circulations. Increasing the model’s vertical dimension was not expected to provide the same improvement, as the Martian atmosphere has not generally been observed to exhibit the same detailed variation as seen on the planet’s surface. The goal of this test was to quantify any change in the amount of dust lifted, and to assess the fidelity of the geographical patterns of modelled dust lifting against observations of an associated atmospheric phenomena: dust storms.

2. Temporal Representation of Martian Dust Lifting

To explore the model’s representation of the temporal variability of dust lifting, experiments were completed with a focus on dust lifting by small-scale convective events: ‘dust devils’ (*Balme and Greeley, 2006; Fenton et al., 2016*). Dust devils are known to vary seasonally and diurnally (e.g. *Fisher et al. 2005* and see Section 2.4). The diurnal timescale was selected for experimentation in this work, as there is little published data concentrating on this aspect of modelled Martian dust devil behaviour, compared to seasonal variation. The experiments were designed to test the variability in diurnal dust devil behaviour.

The expectation was that the diurnal pattern of Martian dust devil behaviour should match that of terrestrial dust devils, which are most active in the afternoon (e.g. *Sinclair, 1969; Snow and McClelland, 1990; Oke et al., 2007; Lorenz and Lanagan, 2014*). The timing of the diurnal maximum in modelled dust devil activity was evaluated against orbital and surface observations of Martian dust devil activity and compared with terrestrial observations.

3. Landing Site Case Study

To investigate the accuracy of the model’s prediction of the environment of a specific landing site, a case study was completed on the modelled atmosphere and near-surface environment encountered by the ESA Exo-Mars Schiaparelli mission. Experiments were completed using two models of different scale: a global-scale model and a mesoscale model. The model

112 results were compared against data returned by the Schiaparelli landing
113 module during its descent.

114 Previous comparisons of results from different scale models often focus
115 on areas of varying terrain (e.g. *Rafkin et al.*, 2001; *Spiga and Forget*,
116 2009), rather than the relatively flat, low-latitude location chosen for the
117 Schiaparelli landing site. It was anticipated that the higher resolution
118 mesoscale model should produce results that match more accurately the
119 data received from the spacecraft. Predictions were also made of the
120 near-surface dust lifting environment that the lander would have experi-
121 enced during its brief surface mission; no previously published studies have
122 directly compared surface dust lifting across global-scale and mesoscale
123 models.

124 1.2 Document Preliminaries

125 This work adopts the following conventions:

- 126 • The Martian calendar proposed within *Clancy et al.* (2000), in which Mars
127 Year 1 (MY1) began on 11th April 1955. At the moment of writing we
128 are approximately midway through MY34.
- 129 • A Martian year lasts 668.6 sols. Moments and periods in the year are iden-
130 tified by the associated Solar Longitude, L_S , which describes the position
131 of Mars in its orbit, shown in Figure 1.1.
- 132 • A Martian sol is 88,775 seconds long, using the standard (SI) unit of
133 seconds (as a reference point, an Earth day is 86,400 seconds long). A
134 Martian ‘hour’ is defined as 1/24th of a sol, following *Lewis et al.* (1999),
135 and a Martian ‘minute’ is 1/60th of that hour.
- 136 • All times herein that refer to surface-level phenomena relate to local times
137 for the locations in question.
- 138 • Surface locations are identified using the ‘planetocentric’ coordinate sys-
139 tem (*Seidelmann et al.*, 2002), with latitude given in degrees north, and

140 longitude given in degrees east from the prime meridian that passes through
 141 the crater Airy-0 (*de Vaucouleurs et al.*, 1973).

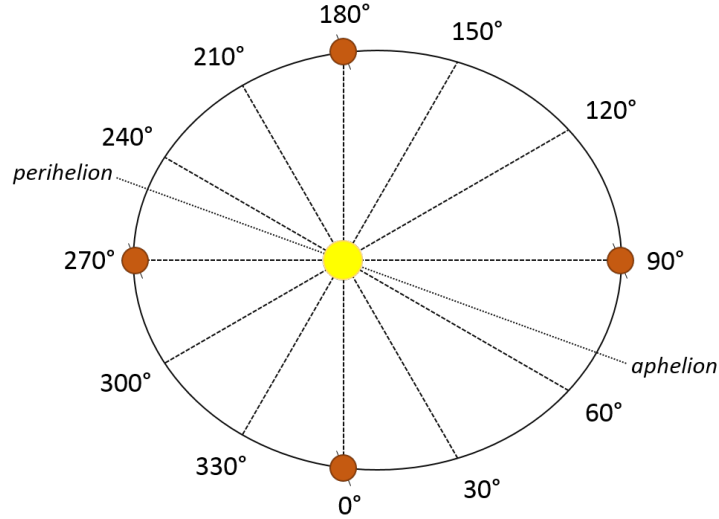


Figure 1.1: Diagram of Solar Longitude, L_S , as it is used to describe moments and periods during the Martian year. The year begins at $L_S = 0^\circ$, the northern hemisphere spring equinox; Martian ‘seasons’ are defined as being $90^\circ L_S$ long, starting from this equinox. Aphelion occurs at $L_S = 71^\circ$ and perihelion occurs at $L_S = 251^\circ$.

1.3 Document Guide

- Chapter 2 explains the importance of dust in the Martian atmosphere, and describes the major dust-lifting phenomena that have been observed on Mars: dust storms and dust devils.
- Chapter 3 details the global atmospheric model that has been used to complete the experiments presented in this work.
- Chapter 4 presents the investigation into a geographical aspect of the model's representation of dust lifting: the model's response to changes in horizontal and vertical resolution.
- Chapter 5 details the investigation into a temporal aspect of the model's representation of dust lifting: the diurnal variability of dust devils.
- Chapter 6 presents the case study of the selected mission landing site, comparing *in situ* data returned by the ESA ExoMars Schiaparelli module with the results of experiments completed at different model scales.
- Chapter 7 contains the summary and conclusions of this research and identifies future research opportunities.

Chapter 2

Martian Atmospheric Dust

This chapter discusses dust in the Martian atmosphere and its importance in the field of Martian climate modelling. A brief overview is given of the dust particles, the dust-lifting events that have been observed on Mars and incorporated into atmospheric models, and the relevance of atmospheric dust to spacecraft landing on Mars.

2.1 The Importance of Martian Dust

Dust has been observed in the Martian atmosphere since modern studies began (although it was not always appreciated as such) (*Schiaparelli*, 1882; *Lowell*, 1907; *Hess*, 1950; *Ryan*, 1964), and investigated as soon as was practicable (e.g. *Gierasch and Goody*, 1971; *Hanel et al.*, 1972). The presence of this dust affects the atmosphere: the dust absorbs incident solar radiation and re-radiates at thermal wavelengths, warming its surroundings (*Gierasch and Goody*, 1971; *Zurek*, 1978; *Cantor et al.*, 2001). This effect is amplified in regions containing a very high density of dust, such as within dust storms, and the general warming effect of dust in the atmosphere can have an impact on larger circulation patterns (*Zurek et al.*, 1992; *Zalucha*, 2014; *Guzewich et al.*, 2016). The effect of atmospheric dust on local temperature and pressure gradients is complex, as changes in local atmospheric gradients affect the strengths and patterns of local winds, which then affect the transport of dust (and other aerosols) within the

179 atmosphere. Dust particles also act as nucleation points for condensing CO₂
 180 and water ice clouds (*Määttänen et al.*, 2005), which in turn can have a large
 181 effect on the wider atmosphere (*Wilson et al.*, 2008; *Madeleine et al.*, 2012).

182 The long-term climate of Mars could be expected to be a consistent annual
 183 cycle with limited variability: without oceans or a thick atmosphere that warms
 184 in response to incident solar radiation, and then transports and slow-releases
 185 that stored heat, the planet’s response to incident solar radiation should be
 186 predictable and repeatable (*Pankine and Ingersoll*, 2004). While annual at-
 187 mospheric patterns and circulations are indeed seen, such as seasonal thermal
 188 gradients (*Read et al.*, 2015), regular variations in dust optical depth¹ (*Smith*,
 189 2009; *Lemmon et al.*, 2015), and the annual low-latitude through-aphelion cloud
 190 belt (*Smith*, 2004), a degree of interannual variability in the atmosphere is also
 191 observed, particularly through the ‘storm season’ around perihelion (*Clancy*
 192 *et al.*, 2000; *Smith*, 2004). The most striking examples of long-term variability
 193 in the Martian climate are the global dust storms, which have been observed
 194 on multiple occasions but are not annual events (*Zurek and Martin*, 1993) and
 195 their re-occurrence cannot yet be predicted accurately (*Shirley*, 2015; *Montabone*
 196 *and Forget*, 2017); global storms are discussed further below.

197 Understanding the properties of the atmospheric dust, and the geographical
 198 and temporal patterns within the cycle of lifting, transport and deposition, is
 199 a key component to understanding the entire Martian climate. Studying – and
 200 modelling – the various parts of the Martian dust cycle expands our knowledge
 201 of the planet’s current climate, the potential past climate (enabling better-
 202 informed investigations into geologically long-term climate studies of both Mars
 203 and other terrestrial planets, *Haberle* 2003), and improves our ability to predict
 204 more accurately future conditions on Mars. Predicting the behaviour of the fu-
 205 ture Martian atmosphere and climate is crucial during planning and completion
 206 of missions to the surface of the planet.

¹The optical depth of a material is the logarithm of the ratio of the incident radiant flux to the transmitted radiant flux: $\tau = \ln(\Phi_e^i/\Phi_e^t)$.

2.2 Dust Particles and Distribution

Few *in situ* samples of Martian atmospheric dust particles have been obtained, although samples of Martian surface particulate have been studied by landers and rovers. One example is the NASA Phoenix lander, which carried a microscope station that was used to determine the particle size distribution of the Martian soil. *Pike et al.* (2011) found that, for particle sizes below 10 μm , the soil at the Phoenix landing site was more comparable to fine-grained lunar regolith than to any terrestrial soil.

The particle size and composition of atmospheric dust can be estimated from observations of the optical properties of the atmosphere. The size of the dust particles is typically explored using distribution functions that can be defined using a limited set of free parameters, which are then used to describe the scattering properties of a given particle population. To facilitate comparison of their results, most studies into the Martian atmospheric dust population assume a log-normal size distribution, where the number density of particles with radius r is given by

$$n(r) = \frac{N}{(2\pi)^{1/2}\sigma_0 r} \exp\left(-\frac{\ln^2(r/r_0)}{2\sigma_0^2}\right), \quad (2.1)$$

where N is the total number of particles per mass of atmosphere (i.e. the number mixing ratio), r_0 is the geometric mean radius of the particles in the distribution, and σ_0 is the standard deviation (*Hansen and Travis, 1974*).

Values for the ‘effective radius’ of a log-normal distribution, r_{eff} , which is the particle mean scattering radius, and the ‘effective variance’, v_{eff} , which defines the spread of the distribution, can be found spectroscopically, and used to calculate r_0 :

$$r_0 = \frac{r_{\text{eff}}}{(1 + v_{\text{eff}})^{5/2}}. \quad (2.2)$$

Orbital and surface observations of atmospheric dust have been used to estimate particle sizes: *Toon et al.* (1977) used Mariner 9 infrared observations and calculated a mean particle radius $\sim 1 \mu\text{m}$; *Pollack et al.* (1995) calculated particle sizes from Viking lander images both during the aphelion low dust season ($r_{\text{eff}} = 1.85 \mu\text{m}$) and during a dust storm ($r_{\text{eff}} = 1.52 \mu\text{m}$), resulting in mean radii of 0.68 μm and 0.55 μm ; *Tomasko et al.* (1999) derived $r_{\text{eff}} = 1.6$

236 μm from Pathfinder images, giving a mean radius of $0.76 \mu\text{m}$; *Wolff and Clancy*
 237 (2003) used MGS Thermal Emission Spectrometer (TES) data to calculate the
 238 average $r_{\text{eff}} = 1.85 \mu\text{m}$, producing a mean radius of $0.67 \mu\text{m}$, but the spatial
 239 range of their data encompassed varying population distributions, including
 240 areas exhibiting mean particle radii of $0.76\text{--}1.03 \mu\text{m}$. More recently, *Komguem*
 241 *et al.* (2013) used Phoenix observations to calculate $r_{\text{eff}} = 1.2\text{--}1.4 \mu\text{m}$, resulting
 242 in a mean particle radius range of $0.76\text{--}0.89 \mu\text{m}$.

243 Combining size distribution models and spectroscopic observations allows
 244 absorption and scattering properties of the dust particle population to be cal-
 245 culated, see *Ockert-Bell et al.* (1997); *Wolff et al.* (2006, 2009, 2010). Conse-
 246 quently, the material that composes the dust particles can be estimated: Mar-
 247 tian surface and atmospheric dust is believed to be largely basaltic in origin
 248 (*Morris et al.*, 2000; *McSween and Keil*, 2000), consisting primarily of related
 249 montmorillonite-like (*Toon et al.*, 1977) and/or palagonite-like (*Clancy et al.*,
 250 1995) materials.

251 The distribution of dust in the Martian atmosphere varies through the year,
 252 as shown in Figure 2.1. Broadly speaking, through $L_S = 0\text{--}180^\circ$, i.e. during the
 253 northern hemisphere spring and summer, the Martian atmosphere experiences
 254 ‘low dust loading’ (e.g. *Smith*, 2004; *Montabone et al.*, 2017). This aphelion
 255 season is relatively cool, and displays highly repeatable cycles of atmospheric
 256 temperature and optical depth through multiple years (e.g. *Smith and Lemmon*,
 257 1999; *Liu et al.*, 2003; *Smith*, 2009; *Montabone et al.*, 2015b). Typical optical
 258 depths² of $\sim 0.4\text{--}0.6$ (*Colburn et al.*, 1989; *Smith and Lemmon*, 1999; *Lemmon*
 259 *et al.*, 2015) are reported through this period.

260 Through $L_S = 180\text{--}360^\circ$ – southern hemisphere spring and summer – the
 261 Martian atmosphere experiences higher dust loading. Generally higher optical
 262 depths are observed through the season, $\tau \sim 0.7\text{--}1.2$ (*Colburn et al.*, 1989; *Mar-*
 263 *tin*, 1986; *Liu et al.*, 2003; *Smith*, 2004), punctuated by sharp rises in τ during
 264 large dust storms (*Pollack et al.*, 1979; *Lemmon et al.*, 2015). The sporadic
 265 occurrence of large dust storms through this period drives a much higher degree
 266 of interannual variability than during the aphelion period (*Clancy et al.*, 2000;

²Unless otherwise noted, (absorption) optical depths given herein refer to values related to the visible portion of the spectrum, with any necessary conversions made using $\tau_{\text{visible}}/\tau_{\text{IR}} \approx 2$ (*Clancy et al.*, 1995).

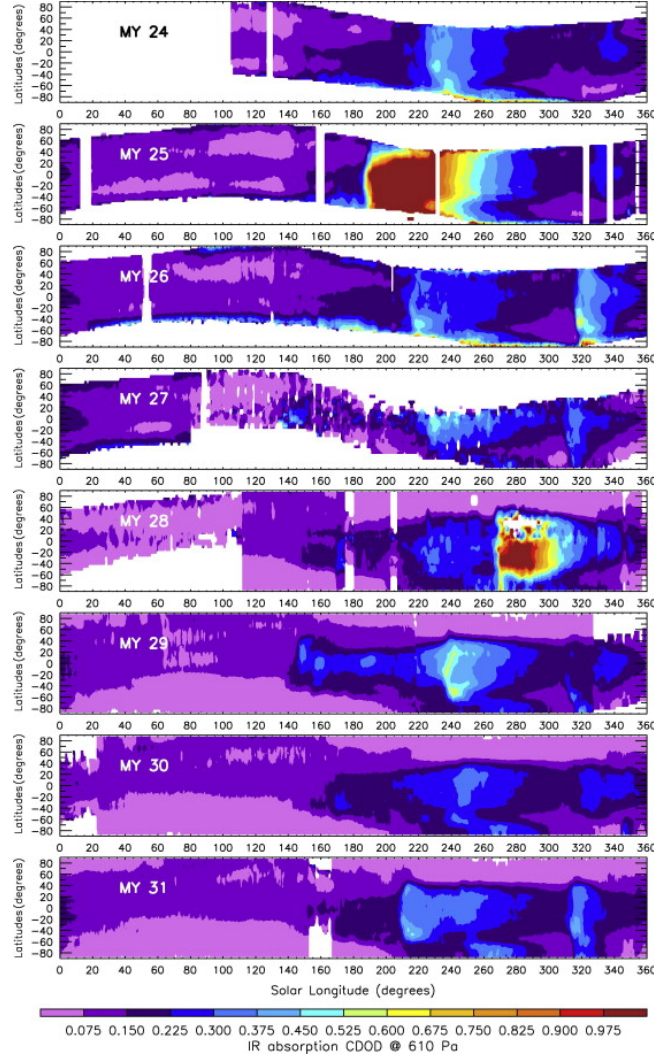


Figure 2.1: Zonal mean absorption column dust optical depth (at a thermal wavelength of $9.3 \mu\text{m}$) by time, across multiple Martian Years. It is easy to see similar ‘low dust loading’ across aphelion seasons and the variability during the perihelion ‘high dust loading’ seasons. From *Montabone et al.* (2015b), Fig. 16.

267 *Liu et al.*, 2003).

268 With regard to the vertical distribution of dust, there is more dust in the
 269 lower atmosphere, and this amount decreases with altitude (*Conrath*, 1975) –
 270 but the detail of this description is complex. Dust is relatively well-mixed in
 271 the lowest few kilometres of the atmosphere, within the convective boundary
 272 layer (CBL) (*Whiteway et al.*, 2009; *Petrosyan et al.*, 2011). Larger particles

fall more quickly (*Kahre et al.*, 2006), so both dust particle size and dust density decrease with altitude. Seasonally, dust tends to rise to higher altitudes during the perihelion season, with the atmosphere exhibiting a faint dust haze up to 50-70 km (*McCleese et al.*, 2010; *Määttänen et al.*, 2013), Figure 2.2, but recently ‘high altitude dust layers’ have been observed through aphelion seasons at heights of 15-25 km (*Heavens et al.*, 2011a), 30 km and 60 km (*Guzewich et al.*, 2013a), although subsequent investigations have not confirmed these observations (*Kleinböhl et al.*, 2015).

The geographical dust cycle of lifting, transportation and deposition is not yet understood to the point at which it can be predicted successfully. Regions which seem to regularly produce dust storms must presumably be resupplied with surface dust at some point, in order to maintain the multi-year cycles observed in recent decades. Studies have been able to develop maps of the surface dust coverage (*Ruff and Christensen*, 2002; *Szwast et al.*, 2006), and proposed climatological maps of atmospheric dust distribution (*Montabone et al.*, 2017), but the full removal-resupply dust cycle – and the timescales involved in such a cycle – is still an active area of research (*Basu et al.*, 2004; *Szwast et al.*, 2006; *Kahre et al.*, 2006; *Wilson*, 2011; *Mulholland et al.*, 2013; *Newman and Richardson*, 2015).

2.3 Dust Storms

Dust storms are common phenomena in the Martian atmosphere, see Figures 2.3 and 2.4. Through decades of capturing images of the surface of Mars – from terrestrial telescopes, from orbiting spacecraft, and recently from surface missions – dust storms have been counted, catalogued and studied. Recent data have allowed multiple surveys of their sizes, timings, locations and behaviour.

Dust storms can be roughly categorised by their physical scale (*Zurek and Martin*, 1993): local storms are the smallest, covering areas starting from a few dozen square kilometres upwards and lasting for only a sol or so (*Cantor et al.*, 2001); regional storms span an area greater than 1.6×10^6 km², last for more than two sols, and develop to cover a geographical area beyond the originating region (*Cantor et al.*, 2001; *Wang and Richardson*, 2015); ‘planet-encircling’

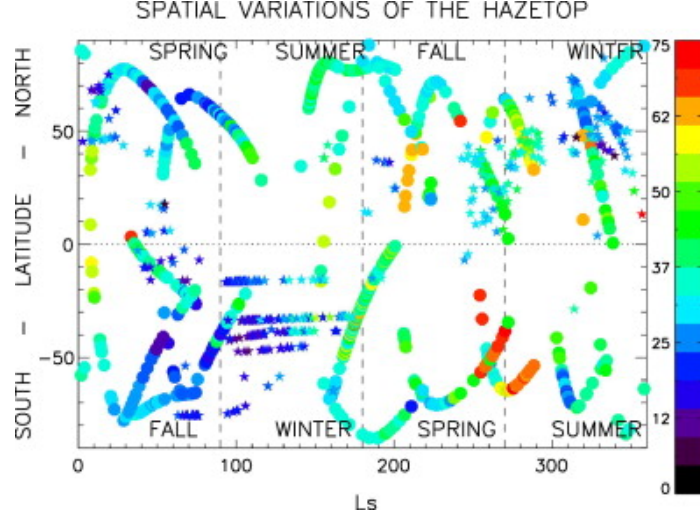


Figure 2.2: The variation in altitude of the top of the dust haze, obtained using solar (circles) and stellar (stars) occultations. The colour scale identifies the altitude of the observed dust. The period around perihelion ($L_S \approx 210\text{--}300^\circ$) exhibits generally higher haze-top altitudes, particularly in the southern hemisphere. From *Määttänen et al. (2013)*, Fig. 4.

304 storms encompass very large dust events that span an entire latitudinal band
 305 of the planet’s surface (*Zurek, 2017*) up to global-scale dust storms, and can
 306 be weeks or months long (*Cantor, 2007*). Local storms are most common –
 307 one study observed local storms occurring ~ 60 times more often than regional
 308 storms (*Cantor et al., 2001*) – and global storms are the most infrequent.

309 The height to which dust is lifted in a storm also varies. Observations have
 310 been made of dust plumes above storm centres reaching heights of 20–30 km
 311 (*Cantor, 2007*), although a recent study suggests that the majority of a regional
 312 storm’s dust remains within the CBL, below an altitude of ~ 8 km (*Heavens,*
 313 *2017*). In contrast, global dust storms can lift dust up to altitudes of ~ 60 km
 314 (*Anderson and Leovy, 1978; Clancy et al., 2010*). Optical depths within dust
 315 storms have been observed by the Viking landers and Spirit and Opportunity
 316 rovers, reaching $\tau \sim 5$ (*Pollack et al., 1979; Lemmon et al., 2015*); note that in
 317 a typical summer atmosphere, without a dust storm present, $\tau \lesssim 1.5$.

318 Dust storm activity is seasonal in nature: the perihelion ‘dust storm season’
 319 is generally defined as spanning $L_S \approx 160\text{--}350^\circ$ (*Zurek and Martin, 1993*), as the
 320 majority of storms are observed through this period. The eccentricity in Mars’

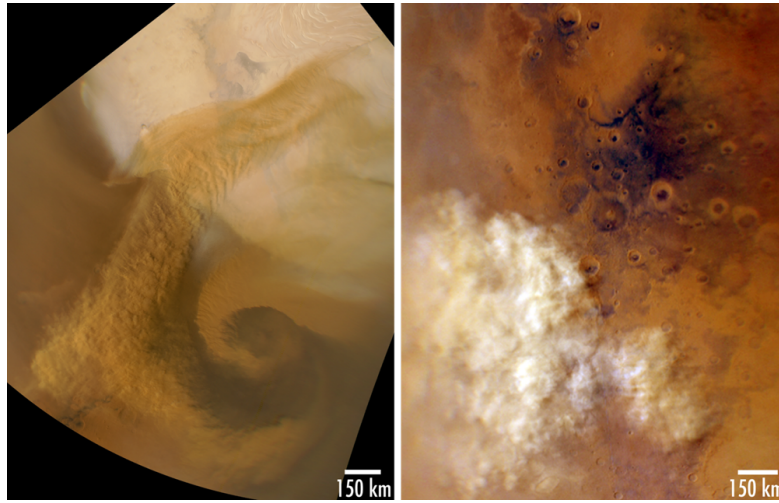


Figure 2.3: Mars Color Imager (MARCI) captures: a spiral storm over the north pole (left), dust clouds nearing the NASA Opportunity rover site (right). Image credit: NASA/JPL-Caltech/Malin Space Science Systems.

orbit (0.093, more than 5 times greater than that of Earth) results in the planet being closer to the sun when the southern hemisphere experiences summer. Southern hemisphere summers therefore receive greater insolation than northern summers, which drives higher temperature and pressure gradients within the atmosphere through this period, impacting large-scale atmospheric circulation and weather patterns, including higher near-surface wind speeds (*Cantor et al.*, 2001). These higher wind speeds facilitate surface dust lifting, a necessary occurrence for the formation of dust storms.

Martian dust storm formation is still not fully understood. The atmospheric dust that populates a storm is lifted from the surface by strong winds (*Wilson*, 2011), rather than by convective phenomena (*Cantor et al.*, 2006), and the trigger for the formation of a storm is believed to be related to the interaction of these winds with large-scale systems: it is the addition of local wind stress (and associated dust lifting) onto large scale circulations (*Kahn et al.*, 1992), weather fronts (*Hinson and Wang*, 2010; *Wang and Richardson*, 2015) or atmospheric tides (*Wang et al.*, 2003) that drives storm development.

The presence of a dust storm creates a positive feedback loop within the Martian atmosphere: wind-lifted dust raises the local atmospheric temperature (*Gierasch and Goody*, 1973), which drives a reduction in near-surface pressure,

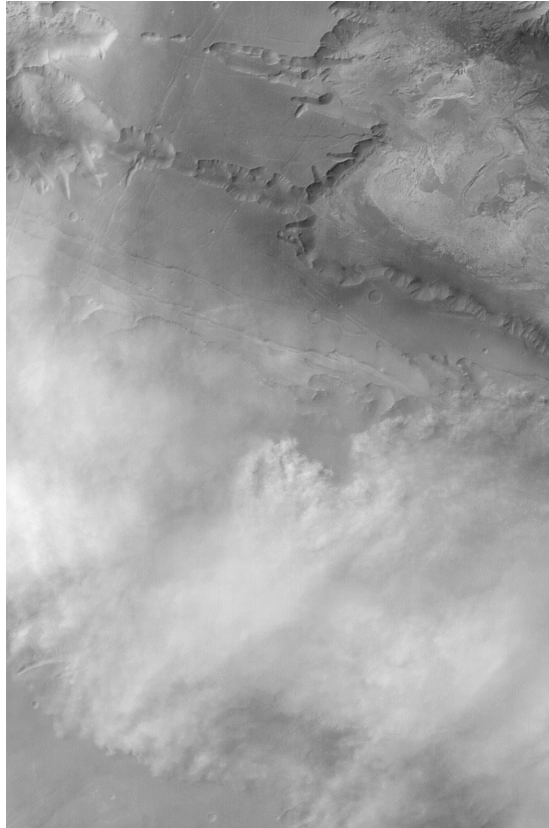


Figure 2.4: A large dust storm captured by the Mars Orbital Camera (MOC) on NASA’s Mars Global Surveyor (MGS) orbiter. The topographic features at the top of the image are Melas Chasma and Ius Chasma in the Valles Marineris system; the width of the area imaged is 246 km. Image credit: NASA/JPL-Caltech/Malin Space Science Systems.

so horizontal temperature and pressure gradients are enhanced, resulting in stronger winds that lift more dust (*Rafkin, 2009*). However, this feedback is limited to the area within – or immediately adjacent to – the storm (*Rafkin, 2009; Toigo et al., 2018*), and will be restricted to near-surface altitudes (*Heavens, 2017*).

A thickening storm reduces the amount of insolation reaching the planet’s surface. This reduced level of surface heating, combined with the increasing atmospheric temperature, reduces the surface-atmosphere temperature difference (potentially by 10-20 K, *Toigo et al. 2018*). This leads to an inhibition of small-scale convective processes within the region of the storm, and is considered to

350 be one potential process that causes storms to weaken and disperse (*Gierasch*
 351 *and Goody*, 1973; *Cantor et al.*, 2001). A storm may also begin to weaken if it
 352 exhausts the amount of surface dust in the immediate area (*Rafkin*, 2009).

353 Storms are seen to form in both the northern and southern hemispheres
 354 during the dust storm season. Geographical regions in which storms have been
 355 observed repeatedly include Elysium, Acidalia, Arcadia, Utopia, Chryse, Hel-
 356 las, Argyre, Noachis, Cimmeria and Sirenum (*Cantor et al.*, 2001; *Wang et al.*,
 357 2005; *Hinson and Wang*, 2010; *Wang and Richardson*, 2015), with some storm-
 358 forming regions associated with areas that experience strong topographically-
 359 related wind patterns (particularly in the northern hemisphere) such as slope
 360 winds, and some associated with areas experiencing strong horizontal tempera-
 361 ture gradients (e.g. the edge of the southern polar cap) (*Cantor et al.*, 2001).

362 Local storms do not last long and do not travel far, but regional storms
 363 can travel great distances. Storms have been observed travelling south in both
 364 northern and southern hemispheres (*Cantor et al.*, 2001; *Wang and Richardson*,
 365 2015) and many southern hemisphere storms also travel laterally (*Wang and*
 366 *Richardson*, 2015). A type of Martian dust storm termed a ‘flushing’ storm
 367 forms at high northern latitudes before travelling southwards over the course of a
 368 number of sols and crossing the equator (*Cantor et al.*, 2001; *Hinson and Wang*,
 369 2010), following channels through Acidalia-Chryse (longitude $\approx -20^\circ$ E) or south
 370 of Utopia (longitude $\approx 110^\circ$ E) (*Wang et al.*, 2005; *Wang and Richardson*, 2015).
 371 The reverse migration has been observed less frequently (*Wang and Richardson*,
 372 2015).

373 Predicting individual dust storms is not yet possible, but trends in storm
 374 timings through the dust storm season have been identified. *Kass et al.* (2016)
 375 report observations through six Martian years of an approximately repeating
 376 three-regional-storms cycle in the southern hemisphere through the dust storm
 377 season: the first storm occurring through $L_S = 205-270^\circ$, the second occurring
 378 through the period $L_S = 245-290^\circ$, usually associated with the edge of the south
 379 polar cap, and the third – and most variable within the study – tending to occur
 380 through $L_S = 305-335^\circ$. *Liu et al.* (2003) completed a wide survey of long term
 381 observations of dust phenomena, and identify a period around $L_S = 225^\circ$ that
 382 annually exhibits high levels of atmospheric dust associated with storm activity,

and there is often a subsequent repeatable lull in storm activity through the perihelion-solstice period, $L_S \approx 250\text{--}270^\circ$ (*Wang, 2007*).

While the dust lifted by any local or regional storm will affect the properties of the immediate atmosphere, modelling studies suggest that only long-lasting (>10 sols) regional storms will have an impact on the more distant atmosphere (*Toigo et al., 2018*). Global dust storms are the exception, as the increased dust loading throughout the entire atmosphere during a global-scale storm creates widespread warming that affects large-scale circulations (*Wilson, 1997; Shirley, 2015*), see Figure 2.5. These global dust events appear to arise from conglomerations of local and/or regional storms that suddenly expand in size (*Strausberg et al., 2005; Cantor, 2007*), although the mechanism for this rapid expansion is not yet understood fully.

An early thorough assessment of global dust storm patterns was completed by *Zurek and Martin (1993)*, who identified an approximate periodicity of three Mars years between global dust storms. This estimate has held roughly true since that study (*Montabone and Forget, 2017*), although the global dust storm of mid-2018 ($L_S \sim 190^\circ$, MY34) was overdue by this approximation, being statistically anticipated in MY32 or MY33 (*Shirley, 2015*).

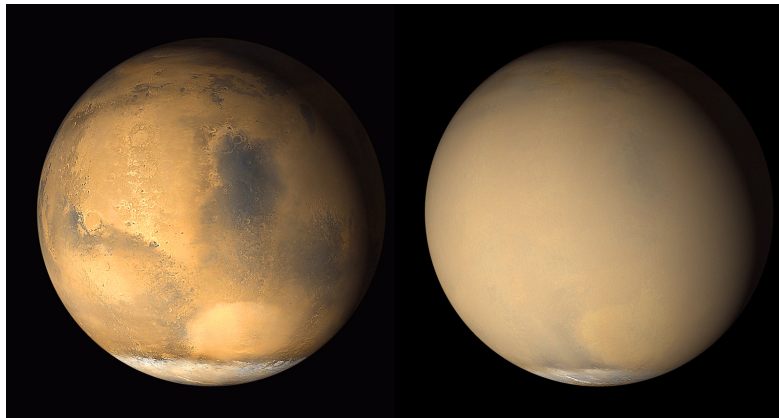


Figure 2.5: Two images of Mars taken by the MGS MOC. Captured only a month apart in 2001, these images illustrate the occasional extent of dust in the Martian atmosphere. Left, Mars with an atmosphere containing a ‘typical’ dust loading for this time of year, $L_S \sim 180^\circ$; right, a planet entirely enveloped by a global-scale dust storm. Image credit: NASA/JPL-Caltech/Malin Space Science Systems.

2.4 Dust Devils

Martian dust devils are named after the apparently similar features observed on Earth (*Sinclair, 1969; Kanak et al., 2000; Balme and Greeley, 2006; Fenton et al., 2016*). These are near-surface atmospheric vortices, visible because of the particles they lift from the ground and entrain in a vertical, upwardly-spiraling column of air. The core of a dust devil is commonly at a lower pressure than the surrounding vortex (*Sinclair, 1964; Balme and Greeley, 2006*). Dust devils are able to lift surface dust particles due to the wind shear stress present within the walls of the vortex (*Murphy and Nelli, 2002; Balme et al., 2003a*). The lower central pressure within the column may also contribute to dust lifting by providing an upwards force that assists the shear stress in overcoming interparticle cohesion forces (*Greeley et al., 2003; Balme and Greeley, 2006*), although it is likely only the smallest particles that can be lifted solely by the reduced core pressure (*Neakrase and Greeley, 2010*).

Dust devils were first identified on Mars in Viking Orbiter images (*Thomas and Gierasch, 1985*) and have since been observed in a large number of images captured by orbiting spacecraft (*Fisher et al., 2005; Stanzel et al., 2006*), as well as in multiple images returned from rovers on the surface (*Ferri et al., 2003; Greeley et al., 2006*), see Figure 2.6. The tracks left behind by the passage of dust devils – visible as dark streaks against the higher albedo surface – have also been observed in many orbiter images (*Cantor et al., 2006*), see Figure 2.7.

Martian dust devil speeds and directions of travel have been studied (*Reiss et al., 2011, 2014b*), their heights calculated (*Fenton and Lorenz, 2015*), potential radial wind speeds evaluated (*Choi and Dundas, 2011*), and estimates have been attempted regarding the amount of dust that they entrain (*Reiss et al., 2014a*).

While dust storms are large, highly visible phenomena that lift and transport large amounts of dust, the Martian atmosphere still contains ‘background’ levels of dust throughout the aphelion half of the year, outside the dust storm season. It is believed that the frequent, small-scale lifting performed by dust devils is what sustains this low-level dust loading in the atmosphere through this period (*Basu et al., 2004; Fisher et al., 2005*). Dust devils therefore play a key role in

the annual Martian dust cycle. Indeed, albedo decreases have been recorded for regions over which large numbers of dust devil tracks have been seen (*Cantor et al.*, 2006) and lander observations reported diurnal variations in dust opacity associated with the diurnal observations of dust devils (*Smith and Lemmon*, 1999). The actual flux of dust lifted into the atmosphere by dust devils is unknown and difficult to calculate due to the large number of uncertainties that exist in the system, including wind speeds internal to the dust devils, the precise structure of the column, the area of the surface from which it draws particles, and how much material is carried to the top of the column before being dispersed compared to how much is redeposited quickly upon the surface (*Balme et al.*, 2003b).

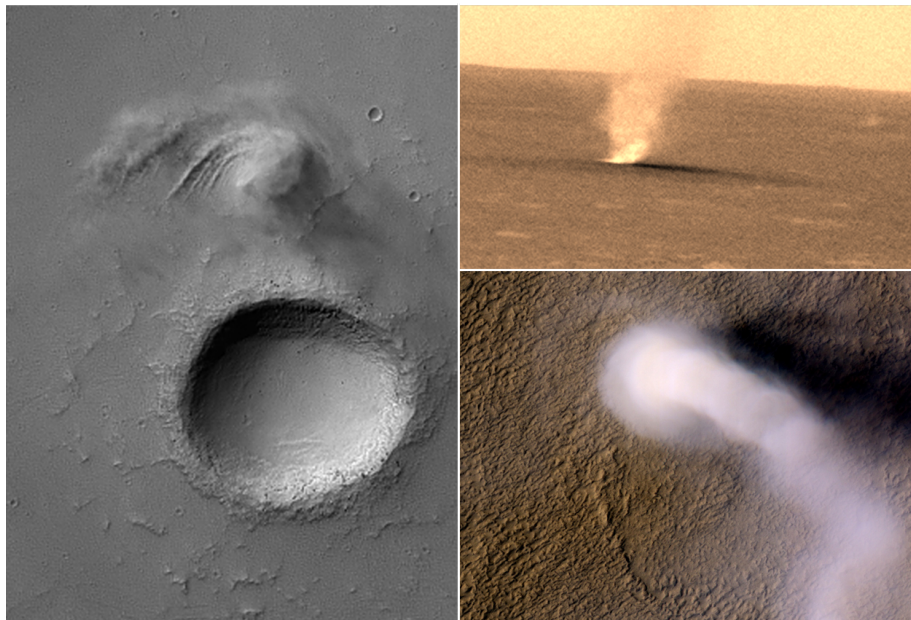


Figure 2.6: Dust devils imaged from orbit and the surface. Clockwise from left: MGS MOC image of a large dust devil in Syria Planum (image credit: NASA/JPL/Malin Space Science Systems); a dust devil captured by NASA's Spirit rover on Sol 486 (during the Northern Hemisphere winter) (image credit: NASA); HiRISE (High Resolution Imaging Science Experiment) image of a dust devil in Amazonis Planitia with a column estimated to be around 70 metres wide but 20 kilometres high (image credit: NASA/JPL-Caltech/University of Arizona).

The morphology of Martian and terrestrial dust devils is similar, but Martian dust devils can grow into much larger atmospheric features. The smallest dust

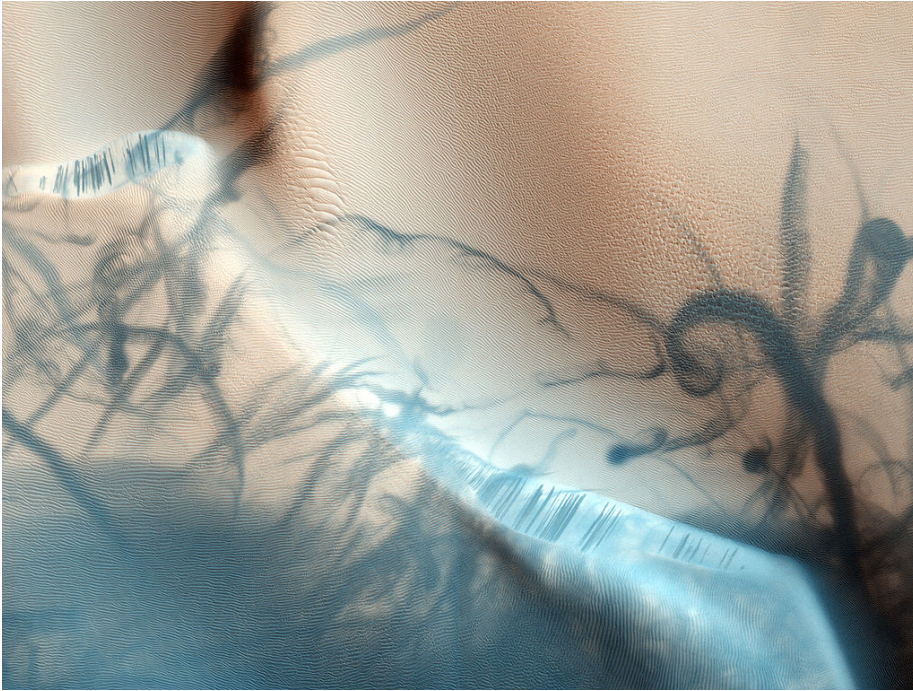


Figure 2.7: A HiRISE image of dust devil tracks across a Nili Fossae sand dune field. The dark tracks indicate a passing dust devil has lifted the surface layer of light-coloured dust from the underlying darker sand (image credit: NASA/JPL/University of Arizona).

446 devils observed on both Earth and Mars are only a few metres in diameter
 447 (*Sinclair, 1969; Ferri et al., 2003*). Large terrestrial dust devils have been
 448 observed with diameters of tens of metres (*Snow and McClelland, 1990; Balme*
 449 *and Greeley, 2006*) and heights between a few metres and a few hundred metres
 450 (*Balme and Greeley, 2006*). In contrast, Martian dust devils have been observed
 451 with diameters of up to ~ 500 m and heights of up to ~ 8 km (*Fisher et al., 2005*).
 452 A possible explanation for this disparity is the lower pressure atmosphere on
 453 Mars, which could allow for more frequent and larger dust devils (*Lorenz and*
 454 *Radebaugh, 2016*).

455 Dust devil activity on Mars is highly variable between regions and seasons
 456 (*Fisher et al., 2005*). Dust devil observations are widespread across the sur-
 457 face of Mars, and they have been seen to move with the ambient wind (*Ferri*
 458 *et al., 2003; Reiss et al., 2014b; Stanzel et al., 2008*). Particularly active dust
 459 devil regions include Amazonis Planitia, Casius, Argyre Planitia, Cimmerium,

460 Sinai, and Solis (*Cantor et al.*, 2006; *Fisher et al.*, 2005). Observations of dust
 461 devils on Earth have identified key local environmental factors that facilitate
 462 their formation: (i) arid, rocky terrain, (ii) frequent, strong insolation of the
 463 ground, (iii) gently sloping topography. Dust devils arise due to heating of the
 464 ground by strong insolation, a vertical instability in the atmosphere in a region
 465 that provides a source of vorticity, a superadiabatic lapse rate, and a supply of
 466 particulate debris (e.g. *Sinclair*, 1969; *Murphy and Nelli*, 2002).

467 Martian dust devils are observed to be most frequent in the spring and
 468 summer months in each hemisphere (*Thomas and Gierasch*, 1985; *Balme et al.*,
 469 2003b; *Cantor et al.*, 2006), and are rarely observed during local winter (*Balme*
 470 *et al.*, 2003b). The diurnal behaviour of dust devils is discussed in Chapter 5.

471 2.5 Other Dust Lifting Phenomena

472 Smaller-scale dust phenomena that can affect dust lifting could be present at
 473 the Martian surface. For example, dust particles entrained in the atmosphere
 474 can carry electrical charge, arising through collisional (triboelectric) charging
 475 (*Rennó et al.*, 2003). This charge can be transmitted to the surface by saltating
 476 particles, resulting in an electric force on surface dust particles that is in the op-
 477 posite direction to the gravitational force (*Kok and Rennó*, 2006). The presence
 478 of such a force can weaken the cohesive forces that bind particles to a surface,
 479 potentially facilitating more extensive dust lifting by other processes, such as
 480 dust devils. However, this effect has been observed at the Earth's surface, which
 481 generally contains a high enough fraction of water molecules that it acts as a
 482 good conductor (*Kok and Rennó*, 2006); the electrostatic force at the surface of
 483 Mars has yet to be explored comprehensively.

484 Collisional electrical charging of dust particles may also affect the size of
 485 the dust objects that are lifted from the surface. Charged dust particles can
 486 adhere to one another, clumping together to form dust aggregates up to 1 mm in
 487 diameter (*Merrison et al.*, 2004). As larger particles are more easily lifted from
 488 a surface than small particles, because smaller particles are more dominated by
 489 the restraining interparticle cohesive forces (*Greeley*, 2002), these aggregates are
 490 more easily lofted into the atmosphere by near surface winds than the smaller

dust particles from which they form.

An additional effect that may be important to dust lifting on Mars is that of thermophoresis. This lifting mechanism couples the greenhouse effect within the surface dust - in which incident radiation can drive warming in dust particles immediately below the top layer of particles - and the thermophoretic effect - in which momentum is transferred between gas molecules and dust particles along a thermal gradient, from warm to cold (*Wurm and Krauss*, 2006). At the Martian surface, the upwards lift that dust particles experience due to thermophoresis is not enough to directly propel them into the atmosphere, but it may lessen the downwards cohesive forces (*Wurm et al.*, 2008).

While these phenomena should not necessarily be considered insignificant among dust lifting processes on Mars, especially when research into their efficacy is still continuing, they are not yet incorporated into the dust lifting included within Martian global models. This is due to the facts that very large-scale models cannot include every small-scale surface phenomena - for reasons of computing efficiency - and until a dust lifting process is more fully understood there will be limited benefit in parameterising its effect.

2.6 Dust and Spacecraft

Missions to Mars must consider the properties of the atmosphere that the travelling spacecraft will encounter upon arrival. This is true for both orbital and landing missions.

Orbiting spacecraft can particularly be affected by atmospheric conditions upon arrival at Mars. The increased atmospheric loading that occurs during dust storms has an impact on the density of the upper atmosphere (at altitudes of 110-120 km) (e.g. *Keating et al.*, 1998), which can affect the aerobraking operations of spacecraft entering orbit around the planet (*Withers and Pratt*, 2013).

Spacecraft descending to the Martian surface under parachute or using retro thrusters can be affected by local wind fields and wind variability (*Rafkin and Michaels*, 2003; *Tyler et al.*, 2008; *Vasavada et al.*, 2012), by convective turbulence (*Petrosyan et al.*, 2011), and by local variations in atmospheric density

522 (*Chen et al.*, 2014). Consideration of the predicted meteorology for a region is
523 therefore often incorporated into landing site selection (*Toigo and Richardson*,
524 2003; *Kass et al.*, 2003; *Forget et al.*, 2011; *Montabone et al.*, 2015a).

525 The near-surface dust environment is an area of potential concern for landers
526 or rovers that are solar powered, as a build-up of dust on solar panels will
527 reduce the power available to the platform (*Landis and Jenkins*, 2000). Local
528 dust events may actually be beneficial in this regard: the Mars Exploration
529 Rovers (MERs) Spirit and Opportunity both experienced ‘dust clearing events’
530 (e.g. *Vaughan et al.*, 2010) that assisted the extension of their nominal missions.
531 These have been attributed to local wind gusts or passing dust devils (*Lorenz*
532 *and Reiss*, 2015).

533 Mission planners need to be able to predict a range of Martian atmospheric
534 properties, including the amount of dust in the atmosphere and the likelihood of
535 a spacecraft encountering local (or global) dust events. Computer modelling is
536 one of the best tools currently available for exploring the environmental factors
537 contributing to the timings and occurrence of atmospheric dust events, and their
538 impact on the Martian climate.

Chapter 3

Modelling Dust in the Martian Atmosphere

This chapter describes the Martian atmospheric model used through the majority of this research: a Global Circulation Model (GCM). The GCM used in this work is the UK version of the LMD (Laboratoire de Météorologie Dynamique) Mars Global Circulation Model, as described by *Forget et al.* (1999) with improvements and updates mentioned below as appropriate.

For comparison with the global simulations, experiments were also completed using a Mesoscale Model. The Mesoscale Model used is the LMD Martian Mesoscale Model, described by *Spiga and Forget* (2009); use of this model is detailed within Chapter 6.

3.1 The Mars Global Circulation Model

GCMs are used widely in planetary science to study long-term, global-scale atmospheric circulations and patterns within various planetary atmospheres.

The UK version of the LMD Mars Global Circulation Model (henceforth “the MGCM”) is a global, multi-level spectral model of the lower and middle regions of the Martian atmosphere; simulations typically extend up to an altitude of ~ 100 km.

The MGCM is composed of a spectral dynamic core, which solves equations

of motion on a rotating sphere, and a large number of ‘physical subroutines’, which implement the parameterisations¹ of physical processes. Many physical processes are available for inclusion in MGCM simulations; this chapter will detail the specific subroutines of the model that are most germane to this research.

3.2 MGCM Dynamics

The MGCM is a spectral model: it uses a truncated series of spherical harmonics to represent horizontal variations in atmospheric fields (*Bourke, 1972*). Field values are stored as coefficients of the spherical harmonic functions.

The model fields evolve with time, their progression realised through a semi-implicit integration method, as described by *Hoskins and Simmons (1975)*. Spectral field values are transformed onto a physical-space grid, field tendencies are calculated, and the reverse transformation is undertaken ahead of the next progression in time. (It is computationally more efficient to transform spectral field values onto a physical-space grid, and back again, than it is to attempt calculations involving non-linear terms within spectral-space, *Bourke 1974*.) Two grids are used within the MGCM: one for nonlinear products (which is created by oversampling field values, in order to reduce any aliasing) and one for physical variables.

As time advances, the MGCM dynamic core solves the ‘primitive equations’ of meteorology to calculate the fluid motion of the atmosphere (e.g. *Kalnay, 2003; Wallace and Hobbs, 2006; Andrews, 2010*). The derivation of these equations begins with terms for the conservation of mass, momentum and energy.

Conservation of mass, when applied to a fluid system, requires that the increase (or decrease) of mass inside a system is equal to the rate at which mass flows into (or out of) that system:

$$\frac{D\rho}{Dt} + \rho \nabla \cdot \mathbf{u} = 0 \quad (3.1)$$

where ρ is the atmospheric density, and \mathbf{u} is the velocity vector.

¹*Parameterisation* within climate modelling is the emulation of a complex process (in global modelling, often one which is also small in scale) through the implementation of a simpler process.

585 Conservation of momentum is expressed in this context using the Navier-
 586 Stokes equation of fluid flow within a rotating frame of reference:

$$\frac{D\mathbf{u}}{Dt} = \mathbf{g} - 2\boldsymbol{\Omega} \times \mathbf{u} - \frac{1}{\rho}\nabla p + \mathbf{F} \quad (3.2)$$

587 where \mathbf{g} is the effective gravity experienced within the rotating frame, $\boldsymbol{\Omega}$ is the
 588 planet's angular velocity vector, p is atmospheric pressure, and \mathbf{F} is the frictional
 589 force per unit mass.

590 Conservation of energy is expressed with the thermodynamic energy equa-
 591 tion:

$$\frac{D\theta}{Dt} = Q \quad (3.3)$$

592 where Q represents diabatic heating and θ is the potential temperature:

$$\theta = T \left(\frac{p_0}{p} \right)^{(R/c_p)} \quad (3.4)$$

593 in which T is temperature, p_0 is a reference pressure (usually taken as 610 Pa
 594 for Mars), R is the gas constant per unit mass, and c_p is the specific heat at
 595 constant pressure per unit mass.

596 To complete the equations describing a planet's rotating atmosphere, it is
 597 necessary to also incorporate the equation of state of an ideal gas:

$$p = \rho RT, \quad (3.5)$$

598 the assumption of hydrostatic equilibrium (a good approximation in a global-
 599 scale model, where vertical atmospheric motions are small compared to the
 600 height of the atmosphere):

$$\frac{\partial p}{\partial z} = -\rho g \quad (3.6)$$

601 in which z is height and g is acceleration due to gravity; and the assumption
 602 that the atmosphere is spherical and thin compared to the radius of the planet.

603 The primitive equations of meteorology can be written in terms of absolute
 604 vorticity, divergence, temperature and log-surface pressure (*Hoskins and Sim-*
 605 *mons*, 1975), which are represented within the MGCM as spectral field values.

606 These values are then transformed into variables within a three-dimensional

physical-space grid: zonal wind (u), meridional wind (v), temperature (T), and surface pressure (p_s). It is within this grid that physical tendencies are calculated, and the results are then transformed back into spectral field components for the model's next temporal advance.

3.2.1 Vertical Coordinate

The vertical direction within the model is represented by a 'sigma' scheme, such that

$$\sigma = \frac{p}{p_0} \quad (3.7)$$

where p is the atmospheric pressure at a point above the surface and p_0 is the atmospheric pressure at the corresponding point (i.e. of the same latitude, longitude and time) where the atmosphere touches the planet's surface. The vertical layers within this scheme follow the terrain at the surface of Mars, at which $\sigma = 1$.

Use of a terrain-following sigma scheme results in simpler lower boundary conditions than would be possible using other vertical coordinate systems (*Simmons and Burridge*, 1981). Schemes in which atmospheric layers are defined by pressure or geometric height can result in layer boundaries intersecting a planet's surface in regions that include large vertical topographical variations across a relatively small horizontal distance. The Martian surface contains several regions of such topography.

3.3 Physical Subroutines

The gridboxes² that comprise the MGCM's physical-space grid are large in scale, spanning dozens or hundreds of horizontal kilometres, depending on latitude and model resolution. A number of physical processes that are important to include within global climate models take place on a much smaller scale, which consequently cannot be modelled explicitly in such a grid. These processes are

²Due to the nature of a 3D grid, each intersection $A(x, y, z)$ is most correctly referred to as a *gridpoint*, and will be termed as such when discussed abstractly. However, when discussing physical-space results, the term *gridbox* will be used; this can be visualised as a cube centred on a gridpoint, extending as far as the halfway marks to the adjacent horizontal and vertical gridpoints.

parameterised in subroutines within the MGCM, in order to assess their effect on large-scale behaviours.

The physical subroutines available within the MGCM range from fundamental (the diurnal cycle, the condensation and sublimation of seasonal CO₂ ice caps) to more specific (e.g. water ice cloud microphysics). The inclusion of certain physical subroutines can be selected or deselected when initiating a simulation.

3.3.1 Tracer Transport

An atmospheric ‘tracer’ is any constituent unit that is carried within the flow of the atmosphere, e.g. dust particles, water molecules, or atoms of various chemical species. If a tracer influences atmospheric circulation it is termed ‘active’ (or ‘radiatively active’, due to it having an impact on atmospheric radiative calculations), otherwise it is a passive tracer.

The MGCM’s tracer advection scheme is a semi-Lagrangian scheme, in which the amount of a tracer at a model gridpoint P at time t is calculated from the amount of that tracer at a point earlier in the atmospheric flow’s trajectory, at time $t - 1$ (Newman, 2001). Using horizontal and vertical wind velocities, the backwards trajectory of the air parcel at P at time t can be extrapolated, to find its origin point at time $t - 1$. The position of this origin is commonly between gridpoints. The tracer mixing ratio at the origin can be calculated by interpolating values from the nearest gridpoints; the mixing ratio can then be propagated through time and space to the desired arrival gridpoint P .

Semi-Lagrangian schemes are not necessarily conservative. In order to conserve mass within the simulation the Priestley method of conservation (Priestley, 1993) is incorporated into this tracer advection scheme at the point of calculating final tracer mixing ratios (Newman *et al.*, 2002a).

Tracer sedimentation rates are based upon particle radius and density, using the classic Stokes expression for particle terminal velocity modified following Rossow (1978):

$$V = \frac{2}{9} \frac{\rho_t g r_t^2}{\nu} \left(1 + \frac{4}{3} \frac{\lambda}{r_t} \right) \quad (3.8)$$

where ρ_t is the density of the tracer particle, r_t is the radius of the tracer particle,

ν is the atmospheric viscosity and λ is the gas mean free path.

It is possible to include a wide range of tracer options within MGCM simulations. These experiments incorporated the dust tracer, but omitted the full available range of trace chemical species. The water cycle and radiatively active water ice particles were also excluded. These decisions were based upon a desire to focus specifically on surface dust lifting, hence eliminating the complicating factor of the full water cycle, and a requirement to limit objective simulation time, hence excluding chemical molecular and atomic tracers that are not relevant to these experiments.

Specific parameters and behaviours of the dust tracer are described in Section 3.4.

3.3.2 Atmospheric Turbulence

The MGCM includes parameterisations of a number of turbulent atmospheric processes that impact the zonal wind, u , meridional wind, v , potential temperature, θ , and the flux of atmospheric tracers. These are:

- **Vertical diffusion:** changes in the turbulent kinetic energy within the atmosphere are calculated using thermal gradients and horizontal wind shear between model layers (*Forget et al., 1999*). This kinetic energy causes turbulent atmospheric motion that drives vertical mixing. Parameterisations related to specific tracer mixing are incorporated into the MGCM calculations of tracer flux, such as processes lifting surface dust (see Section 3.5).
- **Convective adjustment:** the change in potential temperature between model layers is used to test the stability of the modelled atmosphere. If the potential temperature decreases with height (i.e. $\delta\theta/\delta z < 0$) the convective adjustment parameterisation implements quick mixing of the layers, representing the small-scale convection that would occur in a real atmosphere (*Hourdin et al., 1993*). This adjustment restores a stable vertical profile.
- **Gravity wave drag:** atmospheric drag on wind speeds is caused by gravity waves arising from topography, both from low-level drag around topo-

graphic features (*Lott and Miller, 1997*), and at the point of a vertically-propagating wave ‘breaking’, when the wave’s momentum is deposited within the immediate surroundings (*Palmer et al., 1986*).

- **CO₂ condensation and sublimation:** this parameterisation calculates the condensation and sublimation of carbon dioxide both within the atmosphere and on the planet’s surface, and the change in near-surface atmospheric pressure due to this change in state (*Forget et al., 1998*). The sedimentation of CO₂ precipitation through model layers (CO₂ ‘snow’) is included here.

3.3.3 Radiative Flux

Heating processes within the Martian atmosphere are driven by radiative fluxes through the atmosphere and the associated heating (and cooling) rates of the atmospheric components.

Incident radiation is divided into two broad wavelength domains within the MGCM – visible and infrared – and the atmospheric radiative processes are calculated separately for each domain. The heating and cooling rates of atmospheric tracers are calculated from their various absorption, emission and scattering parameters, which are based on particle sizes and particle size distributions (see Section 3.4.1). In the lower and middle Martian atmosphere the most relevant tracers are CO₂ (gas molecules and ice particles), water (vapour and ice particles) and dust (*Haberle et al., 2017*).

The visible domain is subdivided into two bands: 0.1 - 0.5 μm and 0.5 - 5 μm . The infrared domain is subdivided into three main bands: 5 - 11.6 μm (the “9 μm band”), 11.6 - 20 μm (“15 μm band”), and 20 - 200 μm (the “far-infrared”).

The 15 μm band is divided again due to the dominance of CO₂ absorption at these wavelengths. Following the model proposed by *Hourdin (1992)*, this section of the spectrum is split into a central region, 14.2 - 15.7 μm , in which CO₂ absorption is very strongly dominant, and the ‘CO₂ band wings’ either side, within which the absorption is not as strong. MGCM calculations of the atmospheric heating rates associated with the 15 μm band include a simplified model of non-local thermal equilibrium (non-LTE) effects, which are important

at higher altitudes (above ~ 70 km) (*López-Valverde et al.*, 1998).

3.4 Atmospheric Dust

3.4.1 The Dust Particles

Martian atmospheric dust particles have never been sampled, so their exact size, shape and density are not yet precisely known. The particles are modelled within the MGCM as small spheres. This is a reasonable approximation, as the electromagnetic scattering properties of a particle are considered to be only weakly dependent on the shape of the particle (*Wolff and Clancy*, 2003), and such an approximation allows particle size to be defined simply by radius.

The particle size distribution is assumed to be a log-normal distribution, which can be defined by a two-moment scheme, and allows calculation of distribution parameters from knowledge of other parameters (*Heintzenberg*, 1994). Log-normal schemes have previously been used to represent terrestrial aerosol species (*Pollack et al.*, 1995), and it has been shown that a log-normal particle distribution displays scattering parameters that vary little from those observed in both gamma and power law distributions (*Hansen and Travis*, 1974).

Within the two-moment scheme, two dust tracers are advected through the atmosphere: the dust mass mixing ratio (mass of dust per unit mass of atmosphere), q , and the dust number mixing ratio (number of dust particles per unit mass of atmosphere), N . These values are then used to calculate the effective radius, r_{eff} , and the effective variance, v_{eff} , of the size distribution, quantities that are useful for deriving the scattering properties of a given particle population.

The size distribution is initialised with $r_{\text{eff}} = 2.75 \mu\text{m}$ and $v_{\text{eff}} = 0.5$. As the dust tracers are advected, the change in the particle population within a gridbox must be recalculated. While v_{eff} is held constant, the new r_{eff} is calculated using the advected values of q and N :

$$r_{\text{eff}} = r_0 \left(\frac{5}{2} \sigma_0^2 \right) \quad (3.9)$$

in which σ_0 is the standard deviation of the distribution and r_0 is the geometric

751 mean radius:

$$r_0 = \left(\frac{3}{4\pi\rho_p} \frac{q}{N} \exp \left[-4.5\sigma_0^2 \right] \right)^{1/3} \quad (3.10)$$

752 where ρ_p is the density of the dust particles.

753 The recalculated r_{eff} for each gridbox is used in subsequent radiative transfer
 754 calculations. Look-up tables of particle scattering properties have been formu-
 755 lated previously for a range of particle sizes, following *Wolff et al.* (2006), using
 756 Waterman’s T -matrix method (*Waterman*, 1965; *Mishchenko*, 1991). These
 757 values are read from a datafile at simulation initiation.

758 In experiments that implement a ‘prescribed dust scenario’ to determine
 759 atmospheric dust distribution (see Section 3.4.2) only one set of scattering pa-
 760 rameters is used: those that relate to a particle size distribution with $r_{\text{eff}} = 1.5$
 761 μm and $v_{\text{eff}} = 0.3$. These values fall within the ranges identified by a number
 762 of Martian dust particle studies (e.g. *Clancy et al.*, 1995; *Pollack et al.*, 1995;
 763 *Wolff et al.*, 2009; *Smith et al.*, 2013). The scattering properties of a particle
 764 with $r_{\text{eff}} = 1.5 \mu\text{m}$ are illustrated in Figure 3.1.

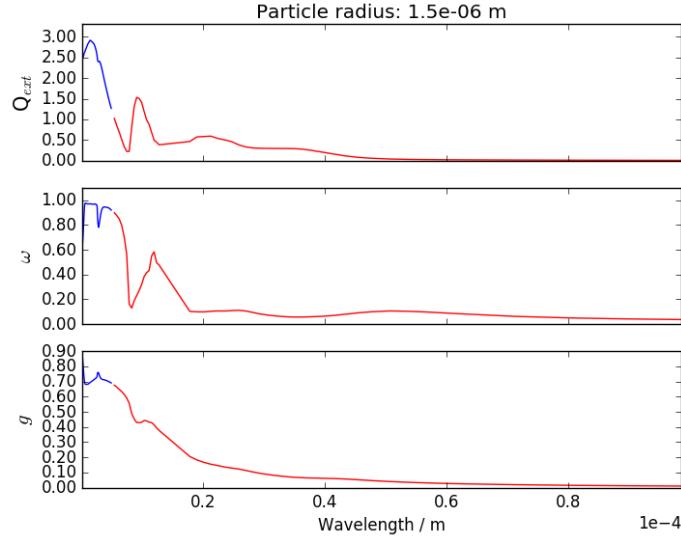


Figure 3.1: Scattering properties by wavelength of the single-size dust particle used in the prescribed atmospheric dust scenario (see Section 3.4.2): the extinction coefficient, Q_{ext} , single scattering albedo, ω , and asymmetry factor, g . The visible domain is drawn in blue and the infrared domain is drawn in red.

765 The composition of Martian dust particles can be estimated from observa-

tions of the optical properties of the atmosphere; Martian surface and atmospheric dust is believed to be largely basaltic in origin, consisting of related montmorillonite-like and/or palagonite-like materials. To account for this uncertain mix of materials, the density of the particles in the model, ρ_p , is set to 2500 kg m⁻³ in this work. This is an approximate average density for a basaltic rock mix (*Philpotts and Ague, 2009*).

3.4.2 Dust Distribution

When dust is an active tracer, radiative calculations are performed on the atmospheric dust distribution that is formulated as described in the previous section. Dust can also be advected as a passive tracer, in which case the radiative calculations are performed on a prescribed dust distribution that matches a specified ‘dust scenario’. The dust scenarios used within the MGCM are taken from *Montabone et al. (2015b)*, and are based upon orbital observations of the optical depth of the Martian atmosphere during MY24 to MY32 (*Smith et al. 2003; Smith 2004, 2009*; see Chapter 2). The dust scenarios are stored as daily maps of optical depth (i.e. one map per sol) at a resolution of 36 points in latitude and 72 points in longitude.

Modelled dust lifted from the surface is summed vertically to obtain a column density, and then scaled (at gridbox resolution) to match the daily global maps of the optical depth of the Martian atmosphere.

These dust optical depth observations are made from orbit and display the sum of the dust in the atmosphere from the planet’s surface to the top of the atmosphere, and cannot provide any information on the vertical distribution of this dust. The vertical profile of atmospheric dust is selected separately in the MGCM. Within the lowest scale height of the atmosphere the dust mixing ratio is constant, representing a well-mixed lower atmospheric layer; above this height a Conrath profile is typically used, in which the density of dust in the atmosphere declines with altitude (*Conrath, 1975*), representing a dust distribution that has undergone a measure of sedimentation. A Conrath profile offers a balance between gravitational sedimentation and vertical mixing: the rate at which the dust density decreases with height is dependent upon the atmospheric scale height and the diffusion and settling times of the dust particles.

798 The dust scenario for MY24 is used in MGCM simulations as an example of a
 799 typical Martian year with average dust loading in the atmosphere. In contrast,
 800 MY25 is considered a high dust year; the 2001 global dust storm took place
 801 in this year during the northern hemisphere autumn. An example plot of the
 802 prescribed atmospheric dust field for MY24 is shown in Figure 3.2.

803 With dust as a passive atmospheric tracer, any dust particles lifted from the
 804 surface of the planet do not impact the atmosphere; i.e. the presence of lifted
 805 dust does not affect variables such as local temperature or wind speeds, which
 806 would consequently affect the rate of dust lifting. Without this feedback loop,
 807 it is possible to explore the effect of specific model parameters on dust lifting
 808 processes, without the lifted dust impacting the results. This allows direct
 809 comparison of experiments in which these parameters are varied.

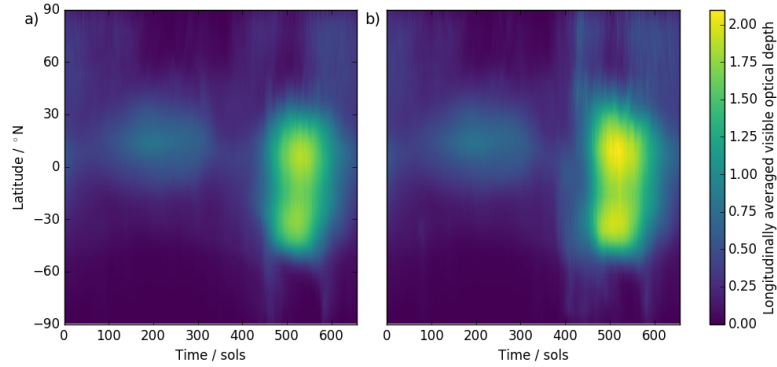


Figure 3.2: Example plots of the longitudinally averaged visible optical depth ($0.67 \mu\text{m}$) of the prescribed atmospheric dust field for two Martian years: a) MY24, b) MY25; cf. *Montabone et al.* (2015b).

810 3.5 Dust Lifting

811 Martian dust enters the bottom of the atmosphere, lifted from the surface. This
 812 can be represented within models either as a designated quantity of dust that is
 813 arbitrarily ‘injected’ into the atmosphere (e.g. *Richardson and Wilson*, 2002),
 814 or by more explicitly modelling specific dust lifting processes (e.g. *Newman*
 815 *et al.*, 2002a; *Basu et al.*, 2006; *Kahre et al.*, 2006). The dust injection method
 816 is suitable for use in simulations that require dust loading in the atmosphere

while other aspects of the climate are being investigated, but it does not allow the identification of locations from which dust is lifted, or the timing of that lifting.

The MGCM incorporates two main processes by which Martian dust is lifted into the atmosphere: lifting by near-surface wind stress and lifting by dust devils.

These processes are distinct subroutines within the model and do not interact at the point of lifting surface dust. If atmospheric dust is radiatively active within a simulation, the dust lifted by both processes will affect the entire atmosphere, which consequently can impact the behaviour of both lifting processes; with dust present only as a passive tracer, the processes remain independent and can be analysed separately.

3.5.1 Near-Surface Wind Stress

Near-surface wind stress (NSWS) is a horizontal force acting upon particles on a surface, which is proportional to the speed of the near-surface wind. Dust particles are lifted by NSWS when the horizontal frictional drag force of the wind is large enough to overcome the forces that hold the particles to the surface.

Lifting by NSWS is considered to be the primary dust lifting process that drives the formation and development of seasonal Martian dust storms (e.g. *Strausberg et al.*, 2005; *Basu et al.*, 2006; *Wilson*, 2011). This process was incorporated into the MGCM by *Newman et al.* (2002a,b) and modified by *Mulholland et al.* (2013).

The amount of dust lifted by NSWS is parameterised within the model, as the real process occurs on a scale that is too small to be modelled explicitly within a global-scale model. Within the parameterisation, surface dust lifting occurs when the friction velocity of the wind, at the boundary where the atmosphere meets the ground, is greater than the threshold friction velocity, i.e. when $u^* > u_t^*$.

The friction velocity, u^* , is found from the local wind speeds and boundary layer drag (*Esau*, 2004):

$$u^* = \frac{\kappa U}{\ln(1 + z/z_0)} \quad (3.11)$$

where U is the magnitude of the near-surface wind speed, calculated from the large-scale zonal and meridional wind components (u and v) within the lowest model layer of the atmosphere, κ is the von Kármán constant, z is the height of that lowest layer, and z_0 is the surface roughness length.

The threshold friction velocity, u_t^* , is also referred to as the ‘lifting threshold’. It is derived from a formulation of the fluid threshold by *Shao and Lu* (2000) (implemented within the MGCM by *Mulholland* 2012). The fluid threshold is the minimum speed at which wind shear stress alone is strong enough to lift particles from a surface, implemented in the MGCM dust lifting parameterisation as:

$$u_{ft} = \sqrt{\frac{0.0246(\gamma\rho_p g)^{0.5}}{\rho_1}} \quad (3.12)$$

where $\gamma = 3 \times 10^{-4} \text{ kg s}^{-2}$, ρ_p is the material density of the particles, set herein to 2500 kg m^{-3} , g is the acceleration due to gravity, and ρ_1 is the atmospheric density in the lowest model layer of the atmosphere.

Applying this fluid threshold directly to surface models would set an unfeasibly high lifting threshold for dust-sized particles, as it ignores the presence of saltating particles. Saltating particles impacting upon a surface of similar particles result in lower wind speeds being required to lift further particles. This ‘impact threshold’ is defined as the minimum speed at which wind shear stress is able to lift particles from a surface when impacting saltating particles are present; the impact threshold is always lower than the fluid threshold.

In parallel with the need to modify the fluid threshold to better approximate reality, directly applying the evaluation of u^* from Equation 3.11 to a global-scale model produces an under-estimation of the subsequently lifted dust. The wind magnitude, U , is necessarily computed at the scale of the model gridboxes, which at lower resolutions can be hundreds of kilometres in size. Therefore this calculation of u^* will not capture the effect of stronger, small-scale gusts of wind (*Newman et al.*, 2002a,b).

In order to account for both saltation and small-scale wind gusts, the threshold friction velocity within the MGCM is set to be a proportion of the fluid threshold:

$$u_t^* = Q_t u_{ft} \quad (3.13)$$

where Q_t is the ratio of the impact threshold to the fluid threshold.

The ratio Q_t for Mars is currently unknown. Estimates for this ratio on Earth range from ≈ 0.8 (*Bagnold, 1937*) to ≈ 0.96 (*Almeida et al., 2008*), but proposed values for Mars are much lower: ~ 0.1 by *Kok (2010)*, ~ 0.3 by *Claudin and Andreotti (2006)*, and ~ 0.48 by *Almeida et al. (2008)*. This is due to the fact that the lower Martian gravity and thinner atmosphere allow particles to saltate in longer and higher trajectories, thus reaching higher velocities and then imparting more energy to surrounding particles when they land.

Modelled dust is lifted from the planet’s surface into the lowest layer of the atmosphere when $u^* > u_t^*$. The vertical dust flux, F_{dust} , is calculated as a proportion of the horizontal dust flux:

$$F_{\text{dust}} = \alpha_N F_H \quad (3.14)$$

where α_N is a tuneable parameter representing the efficiency of dust lifting by NSWs, and F_H is the horizontal dust flux derived by *Mulholland (2012)* following experimental results presented by *Kok and Rennó (2008)*:

$$F_H = 0.25 \frac{\rho_1}{g} (u^*)^3 \left(1 - \left(\frac{u_t^*}{u^*} \right)^2 \right) \left(7 + 50 \left(\frac{u_t^*}{u^*} \right)^2 \right) \quad (3.15)$$

The NSWs dust lifting parameterisations employed currently within the MGCM are similar to the subroutines used within other Martian global atmospheric models (e.g. *Basu et al., 2006*; *Kahre et al., 2006*; *Takahashi et al., 2011a*). The majority of Mars global atmospheric models that implement dust lifting through NSWs include a ‘lifting efficiency’ parameter analogous to α_N .

3.5.2 Dust Devils

The dust devil parameterisation in operation within the MGCM was implemented by *Newman et al. (2002a)* (and modified subsequently by *Mulholland (2012)* to incorporate the two-moment tracer scheme).

The modelled flux of dust lifted by dust devils at a point on the surface, F_{devil} , is calculated from the local sensible heat flux, F_s , and the dust devil

thermodynamic efficiency, η :

$$F_{\text{devil}} = \alpha_D \eta F_s \quad (3.16)$$

where α_D is a tuneable parameter representing the ‘dust devil lifting efficiency’. This factor must be included in the parameterisation because existing observations of Martian dust devils are not yet able to quantify the actual amount of surface dust lifted by the phenomenon. This parameter is set at a value that best reproduces the annual atmospheric dust cycle, matched against the range of observed dust opacities (*Newman et al.*, 2002a). For the ‘climate modelling’ resolution (T31, see Section 3.6), $\alpha_D = 1.13333 \times 10^{-8} \text{ kg J}^{-1}$. This value is not modified throughout the simulations within this work.

Dust devil thermodynamic efficiency, η , arises from modelling a dust devil as a ‘heat engine’, following *Rennó et al.* (1998): this quantity is the fraction of the heat input to the dust devil ‘system’ that is converted into mechanical work.

This thermodynamic efficiency can be approximated as $\eta \approx 1 - b$, where

$$b = \frac{(p_{\text{surf}}^{\chi+1} - p_{\text{top}}^{\chi+1})}{(p_{\text{surf}} - p_{\text{top}})(\chi + 1)p_{\text{surf}}^{\chi}} \quad (3.17)$$

where p_{surf} is the near-surface atmospheric pressure, p_{top} is the pressure at the top of the convective boundary layer, and χ is equal to the specific gas constant divided by the specific heat capacity at constant pressure ($R/c_p = 0.256793$).

The sensible heat flux, F_s , expresses the input heat available to drive the dust devil ‘heat engine’:

$$F_s = \rho c_p C_D U (T_{\text{surf}} - T_{\text{atm}}) \quad (3.18)$$

in which ρ is the near-surface atmospheric density, C_D is the surface drag coefficient, U is the magnitude of the horizontal wind speed (defined as in Equation 3.11), T_{surf} is the surface temperature, and T_{atm} is the near-surface atmospheric temperature (i.e. the local temperature in the lowest model layer of the atmosphere).

The surface drag coefficient, C_D , is parameterised using the classical expres-

sion for a boundary layer drag coefficient (*Esau*, 2004):

$$C_D = \left(\frac{\kappa}{\ln(1 + z/z_0)} \right)^2 \quad (3.19)$$

where z is the height of the lowest model layer of the atmosphere, and z_0 is the surface roughness length. In the experiments completed for this thesis, neither z or z_0 are varied: $z \sim 5$ m and $z_0 = 0.01$ m. The value of C_D is therefore constant across the planet's surface.

The MGCM dust devil parameterisation has been used as a foundation for similar parameterisations in other Mars atmospheric models. Two such models, the NASA Ames Mars General Circulation Model (GCM) and the Geophysical Fluid Dynamics Laboratory (GFDL) Mars GCM, directly incorporate the *Newman et al.* (2002a) parameterisation (respectively *Kahre et al.* (2006, 2008) and *Basu et al.* (2004)).

3.6 Model Resolution

Horizontal Resolution

The horizontal resolution of a spectral model is defined by the total wavenumber of the spherical harmonic series. Table 3.1 identifies the range of MGCM resolutions used within this research. Figure 3.3 illustrates the relative latitude and longitude sizes of the physical gridboxes used across the different resolutions.

Selecting the horizontal resolution at which an experiment is completed does not require a change to the model's input parameters beyond identifying the wavenumber associated with the spectral model and the consequent number of maximum total rows and columns associated with the horizontal grid used to resolve physical processes. Results from experiments completed at different resolutions can therefore be compared directly: differences observed within the data are a consequence of the changing resolution, not a reflection of the input parameters selected.

Simulation resolution	Number of grid points, latitude and longitude	Approximate physical resolution, ° latitude \times ° longitude
T31	36, 72	5.00×5.00
T42	48, 96	3.75×3.75
T63	72, 144	2.50×2.50
T85	96, 198	1.88×1.88
T127	144, 288	1.25×1.25
T170	192, 384	0.94×0.94

Table 3.1: MGCM resolutions used in this research. The wavenumbers used for the series truncation are ‘common’ spectral model grid resolutions employed originally within terrestrial climate modelling (*National Center for Atmospheric Research Staff (Eds.)*).

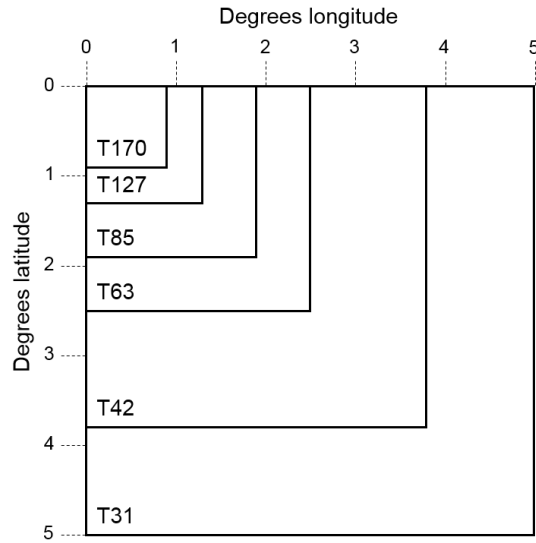


Figure 3.3: Comparison of physical process gridbox sizes across the model resolutions used with this research. 1 degree of latitude on Mars is equal to 59.27 km; for comparison, 1 degree of latitude on Earth is equal to 111.2 km.

952 Vertical Resolution

953 The vertical layers in most MGCM simulations are not of a constant depth: layer
 954 thickness increases as altitude increases. The lowest layers are shallowest (~ 10
 955 to ~ 100 metres deep), the layers through the middle of the modelled altitudes
 956 are a few kilometres deep, and the uppermost layers are the deepest (> 10 km).
 957 This distribution was selected in order to produce the highest vertical resolution
 958 near the surface-atmosphere boundary (e.g. *Lewis et al.*, 1999).

959 Figure 3.4 shows how sigma coordinate and model layer are related, and

the approximate mid-layer altitudes for the resultant model layers (in a typical 25-layer experiment); Figure 3.5 illustrates the difference in model layer depth through the atmosphere.

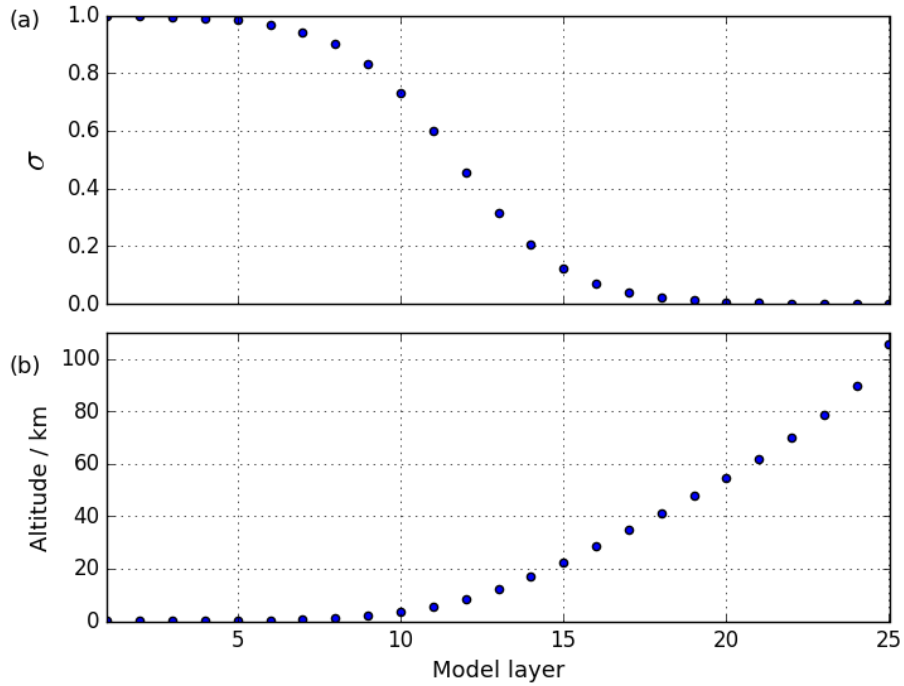


Figure 3.4: Implementation of a vertical 25-layer sigma scheme: (a) σ values by model layer; (b) approximate altitude of model layer mid-points.

Temporal Resolution

At the start of an experiment the rate at which simulation time passes is selected through a parameter specifying the number of model timesteps to be completed per sol. Atmospheric dynamics calculations are completed each timestep, while physical tendency calculations are completed less frequently.

The number of timesteps per sol must be selected with consideration of the horizontal resolution of the simulation. The length of a timestep is limited by the need to satisfy the Courant-Friedrichs-Lewy (CFL) condition for quantities being propagated within a spatial grid: that the timestep, Δt , must be shorter than the time required for information to be transferred over more than one

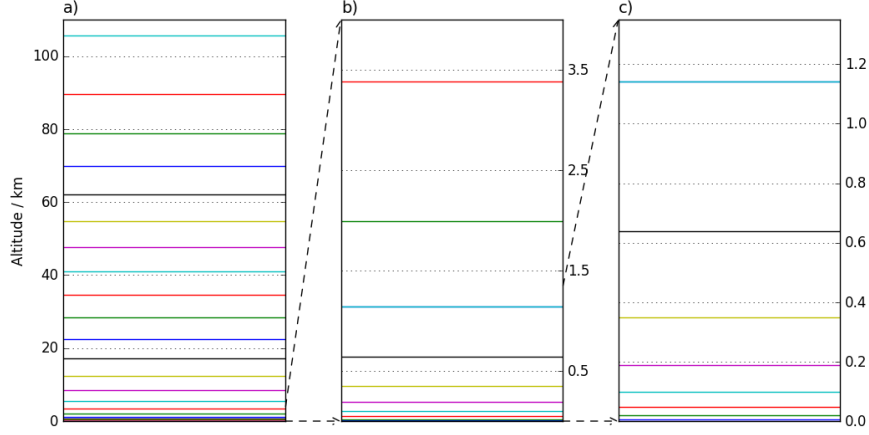


Figure 3.5: Illustration of mid-layer altitudes within an example 25 vertical layer simulation: a) all 25 layers; b) lowest 10 layers; c) layers within the lowest ~kilometre of the atmosphere.

973 gridbox:

$$\Delta t \leq \Delta x / u \quad (3.20)$$

974 where Δx is the grid spacing and u is the speed of propagation (*McGuffie and*
975 *Henderson-Sellers, 2005*).

976 Table 3.2 identifies the approximate length of the timesteps used in the
977 different resolution simulations within this research.

Simulation resolution	Timesteps per sol	Dynamics timestep length / minutes	Physics timestep length / minutes
T31	480	3.08	30.82
T42	960	1.54	15.41
T63	1750	0.85	5.92
T85	1750	0.85	5.92
T127	2500	0.59	2.37
T170	5000	0.30	1.18

Table 3.2: Approximate timestep lengths by model resolution. The model completes dynamics calculations each timestep; the Martian sol is 88775.2 seconds long, and the length of this ‘dynamics timestep’ is approximated here in (Earth) minutes solely to aid comprehension. Physical tendency calculations are completed at a lower rate, the ‘physics timestep’, defined as a multiple of dynamics timesteps.

3.7 Experimental Procedure

The atmosphere within an MGCM simulation is initialised in a dynamically static state. Atmospheric circulations develop as simulation time progresses and dynamic calculations are completed.

Experiments are run for multiple subjective years before any results are analysed, in order to allow long-period circulations – and consequent atmospheric properties and tracer distributions – to settle into patterns and cycles representative of a full dynamic atmosphere. For most experiments a two year ‘spin-up’ period is completed, and the third year is analysed to capture the full seasonal cycle (each year starting at solar longitude $L_S = 0^\circ$).

For high resolution simulations the objective time required to complete multi-year simulations becomes prohibitive; for example, a simulation of 60 Martian sols ($\sim 30^\circ L_S$) at the T170 resolution currently takes around a full real-time calendar month to complete. The two-year spin-up is consequently unfeasible at the highest resolutions.

The solution is to use results from a simulation completed at a lower resolution as a ‘stepping-stone’, and to interpolate those results up to a larger horizontal grid. MGCM simulations can be started (and restarted) at any point in the Martian year, allowing a high resolution simulation to be started from any chosen sol, provided that a suitable lower resolution simulation exists from which to interpolate data. High resolution simulations can therefore be completed for any selected period throughout the Martian year and the results compared directly with lower resolution simulations.

This interpolation has the potential to introduce artefacts into the data. High resolution simulations started in this manner are therefore always run for a ‘settle-down’³ period before data is analysed for comparison, e.g. a 60-sol settle-down period is completed ahead of the desired 60-sol analysis period. The analysed data will therefore be free of interpolation errors and be an accurate representation of the Martian atmosphere captured at the higher resolution.

³The term ‘settle-down’ is used herein for the pre-analysis period within a simulation that was started from an interpolated moment, while the term ‘spin-up’ is only used for this period in a simulation started from a static state.

Chapter 4

Wind-Stress Dust Lifting and Model Resolution

4.1 Introduction

Martian dust storms range in size from relatively small, localised events, through ‘regional’ dust storms, to planet-encircling and global storms. Dust storms are largely seasonal in nature, with the majority of storms being observed during southern hemisphere spring and summer months, $L_S \approx 160\text{--}350^\circ$ (e.g. *Zurek and Martin* 1993; *Cantor et al.* 2001; *Wang and Richardson* 2015, and refer back to Section 2.3).

The formation and development of dust storms on Mars is driven by the interaction of near-surface winds and large scale circulations (e.g. *Leovy et al.*, 1973; *Kahn et al.*, 1992; *Wang et al.*, 2003; *Strausberg et al.*, 2005; *Hinson and Wang*, 2010; *Wilson*, 2011; *Wang and Richardson*, 2015). The near-surface winds lift the dust that populates the storm. This surface dust lifting is a small-scale process; it is consequently incorporated into global models through parameterisation.

It is understood by the modelling community that the resolution at which experiments are completed can have a large impact on the results of those experiments (e.g. *Takahashi et al.*, 2011a; *Toigo et al.*, 2012; *Mulholland et al.*, 2015). For example, changing the horizontal resolution of a simulation will change the

size of the surface features that can be resolved in that experiment, which can impact any parameterisation associated with near-surface phenomena; depending on the settings of the model, a small change at surface level can affect the progression of the entire global simulation.

Few published studies have considered in detail how the results of dust lifting parameterisations are affected by a change in the underlying model resolution (*Takahashi et al.* 2008 identify preliminary investigations but offer no recommendations). The dependence of the results of MGCM dust lifting experiments upon this facet of modelling has not been quantified, and it is not known how robust such results are when compared across changing resolutions.

The work discussed in this chapter uses the MGCM to investigate the representation of dust lifting by near-surface winds across different horizontal and vertical model resolutions. Section 4.2 describes the experimental method used within this work and specifies the different horizontal and vertical resolutions used. Section 4.3.1 presents the impact of changes to the model’s horizontal resolution; Section 4.3.2 presents the impact of changes to the model’s vertical resolution. Section 4.4 discusses the results, investigating how and why the amount of dust lifted and the spatial distribution of dust lifting are affected by resolution change. The results of multiple experiments are also compared with published observations of dust storms on the surface of Mars. Section 4.5 explores the very high resolution tests completed in this work. Section 4.6 summarises this chapter and details recommendations.

The reader should note the nomenclature used within this chapter: ‘dust lifting’ is used exclusively to refer to dust lifting by near-surface wind stress (NSWS); ‘height’, when used to refer to a point in the atmosphere, relates to the height of that point above the local surface (i.e. not with reference to the Mars geoid); Northern Hemisphere and Southern Hemisphere will be abbreviated to NH and SH, respectively.

The longitude-latitude convention used within this work is to define a location using -90° to 90° N in latitude and -180° to 180° E in longitude. The equatorial meridian (0° lat, 0° lon) will always be shown in the centre of globally plotted data.

1060 4.2 Method

1061 Experiments were completed across a range of horizontal and vertical model
 1062 resolutions. The horizontal resolution of the MGCM is varied by modifying
 1063 the wavenumber truncation of the model’s spectral grid (see Section 3.6); Table
 1064 4.1 identifies the horizontal resolutions used within this work. The vertical
 1065 resolution of the MGCM is varied by modifying the number of modelled vertical
 1066 layers: an ‘L25’ simulation uses 25 vertical layers. The vertical layers in a
 1067 simulation are not equally spaced: the lowest layers are shallowest, in order
 1068 to provide the greatest vertical resolution in the layers most closely involved in
 1069 near-surface processes (*Lewis et al.* 1999, and refer back to Figure 3.5). Table 4.2
 1070 identifies the vertical resolutions used within this research, and Figure 4.1 shows
 1071 how the altitude of each model layer varies across simulations with different
 1072 numbers of vertical layers.

1073 When varying the horizontal resolution, experiments were completed using
 1074 25 vertical layers. When varying the vertical resolution, experiments were com-
 1075 pleted using the T31 horizontal resolution, which produces a physical resolution
 1076 of $\sim 5^\circ$ lat \times $\sim 5^\circ$ lon. Similar horizontal resolutions are typically used to model
 1077 the global Martian climate; e.g. by *Newman et al.* (2002a) when implementing
 1078 a dust transport scheme; by *Basu et al.* (2004) and by *Kahre et al.* (2005) when
 1079 investigating the seasonal or interannual dust cycles; by *Steele et al.* (2014) when
 1080 studying the Martian water and cloud cycle. These same studies used a vertical
 1081 resolution comparable with the resolution achieved by the MGCM’s 25 layers.

Resolution ID	Approximate physical resolution / $^\circ$ latitude \times $^\circ$ longitude	Number of horizontal gridboxes in simulation
T31	5.00×5.00	2592
T42	3.75×3.75	4608
T63	2.50×2.50	10368
T85	1.88×1.88	18432
T127 ^a	1.25×1.25	41472
T170 ^a	0.94×0.94	73728

Table 4.1: MGCM horizontal resolutions used in this research. ^aThis resolution has been used sparingly, see Section 4.5.

Resolution ID	Height of lowest layer / km	Number of layers in lowest 10 km	Height of top layer / km
L25	0.005	12	105.61
L30	0.005	14	106.26
L35	0.005	16	106.71
L50	0.005	22	107.47
L60	0.005	26	107.76
L70	0.005	30	107.96
L100	0.005	41	108.30

Table 4.2: MGCM vertical layer numbers used in this research.

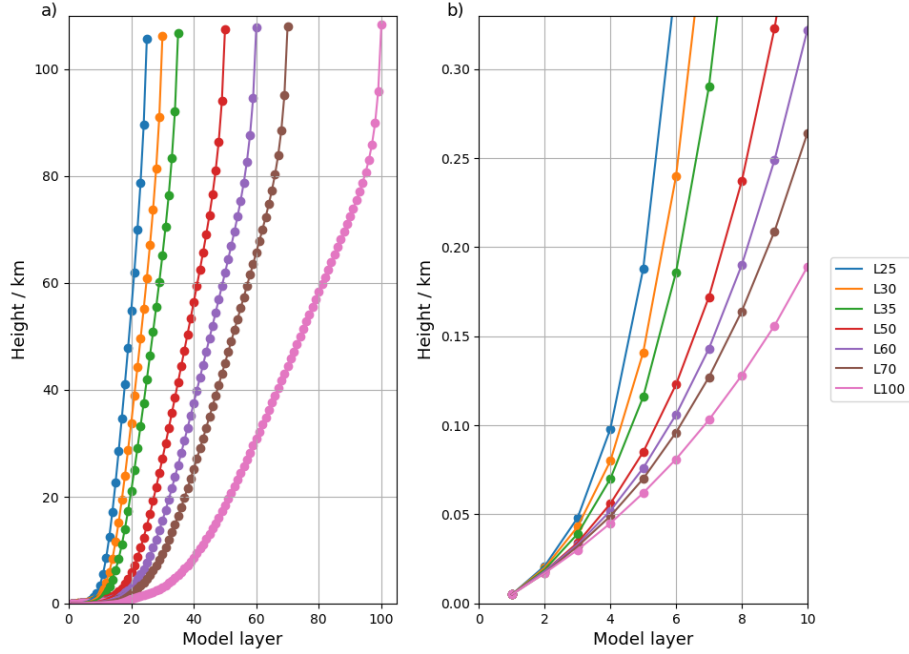


Figure 4.1: The approximate altitudes of layer mid-points across a range of simulations with different numbers of vertical layers. Note that the top of the atmosphere varies little in height across the simulations (a), and that the heights of the lowest layers are similar for the majority of the simulations (b).

1082 The MGCM’s parameterisation of dust lifting by near-surface wind stress
 1083 was implemented by *Newman et al.* (2002a,b); see Section 3.5.1. Similar pa-
 1084 rameterisations are included in other global Martian atmosphere models (e.g.
 1085 *Basu et al.*, 2006; *Kahre et al.*, 2006; *Takahashi et al.*, 2011a).

1086 Dust can be lifted from any gridbox at any time if the NSWS is strong
 1087 enough. The exception to this is if a surface layer of CO₂ ice is present in a
 1088 gridbox: this is considered a barrier to dust lifting and the recorded lifting rate
 1089 is zero.

1090 As described in Section 3.5.1, the MGCM NSWS dust lifting parameter-
 1091 isation includes two parameters that can be used to calibrate the amount of
 1092 dust that is lifted in an experiment: the threshold velocity (the minimum wind
 1093 speed required to lift dust, u_t^*) and the lifting efficiency (a tuneable parameter
 1094 representing how efficient this dust lifting process is, α_N). During the experi-
 1095 ments described below these parameters were held constant, in order to solely
 1096 test the impact the changing resolution had on the results of the experiments.
 1097 It is anticipated that the information gained from these experiments can be
 1098 used in future work to set these parameters so as to calibrate the model across
 1099 resolutions.

1100 Experiments were run for multiple years prior to the period required for
 1101 data analysis, to allow long-period atmospheric circulations to settle into rep-
 1102 resentative patterns and cycles. This was described in Section 3.7 and is only
 1103 summarised here: for most experiments a two year ‘spin-up’ period was com-
 1104 pleted and only the full third year analysed (starting at $L_S = 0^\circ$). For high
 1105 resolution experiments it was possible to interpolate results from a lower res-
 1106 olution experiment up to a larger horizontal grid, avoiding the prohibitively
 1107 long spin-up period required at such resolutions. High resolution experiments
 1108 started in this manner are still run for a short time (~ 60 sols) ahead of the
 1109 required analysis period, in order to eliminate any artefacts introduced by the
 1110 interpolation.

1111 4.3 Results

1112 4.3.1 Changing the Horizontal Resolution

1113 Global plots of dust lifting through a Martian year are shown in Figures 4.2
 1114 to 4.5. Each panel of the plots displays the sum of all dust lifted by NSWs
 1115 through an $L_S = 30^\circ$ -long portion of the year. A coloured gridbox indicates
 1116 that dust was lifted in this gridbox during the displayed period; white regions
 1117 indicate a dust lifting rate of zero through this period. The colour-scale is a
 1118 stretched, pseudo-log scale, used with the sole intent of emphasising the full
 1119 range of the scale. Note that the total amount of dust lifted varies by two
 1120 orders of magnitude between resolutions.

1121 These plots show dust lifting across four increasing horizontal resolutions:
 1122 T31 (Figure 4.2), T42 (Figure 4.3), T63 (Figure 4.4), and T85 (Figure 4.5). T31
 1123 is a relatively low resolution, typically used for long-term climate modelling; T85
 1124 is a moderately high resolution for Martian global modelling. (All experiments
 1125 were completed using 25 vertical layers.)

1126 The dust lifting shown in these plots is not constant, but is instead sporadic
 1127 in nature. An example of this is shown in Figure 4.6: the instants at which dust
 1128 is lifted through the period $210\text{--}240^\circ L_S$ are shown for each of the horizontal
 1129 resolutions under discussion, for the location $30^\circ \text{ N}, -30^\circ \text{ E}$. (This point was
 1130 selected because it exhibits dust lifting through this period in each of these
 1131 experiments.)

1132 The data shown in Figures 4.2 to 4.5 are plotted in Figure 4.7, as the amount
 1133 of lifted dust lifted in each $L_S = 30^\circ$ period through the year (normalised by the
 1134 number of sols in each period), for each resolution. There is a large difference
 1135 in the amount of dust lifted in the experiments completed at the T42 and T63
 1136 resolutions, compared to the difference between the results for the T63 and T85
 1137 resolutions, even though the delta in resolution is similar across each resolution
 1138 increase. This is discussed in Section 4.4.2.

1139 Figure 4.8 shows the annual, global sum of lifted dust mass against the
 1140 resolution grid spacing.

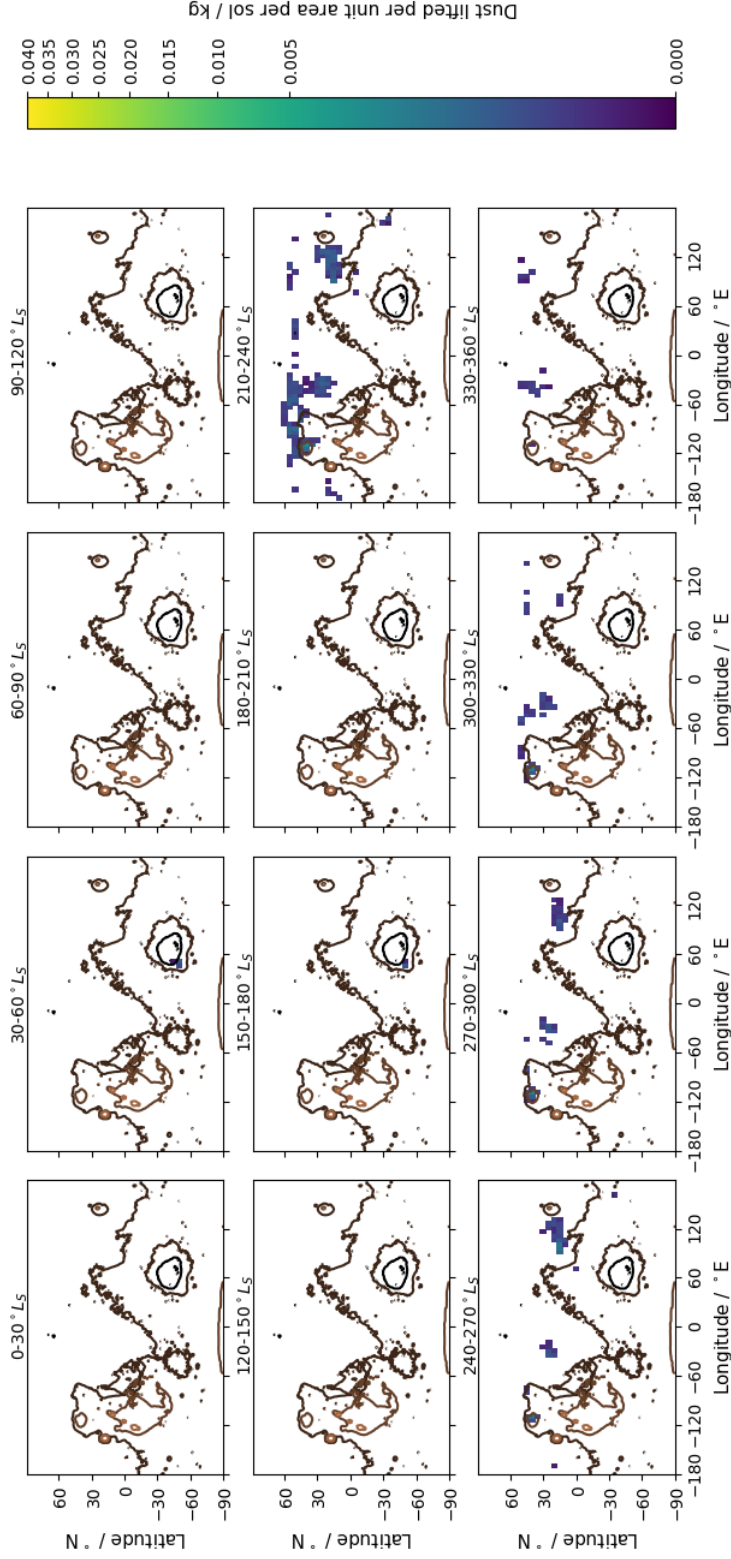


Figure 4.2: Global dust lifting by NSWS within a T31[L25] experiment. Each panel shows lifted dust mass per unit area through a $L_S = 30^\circ$ -long period in the Martian year. The colour-scale is a stretched, pseudo-log scale, indicating dust lifting during each $L_S = 30^\circ$ period; white indicates zero lifting. (Topography contours added for reference only, yellow lines indicate higher elevations than dark lines.)

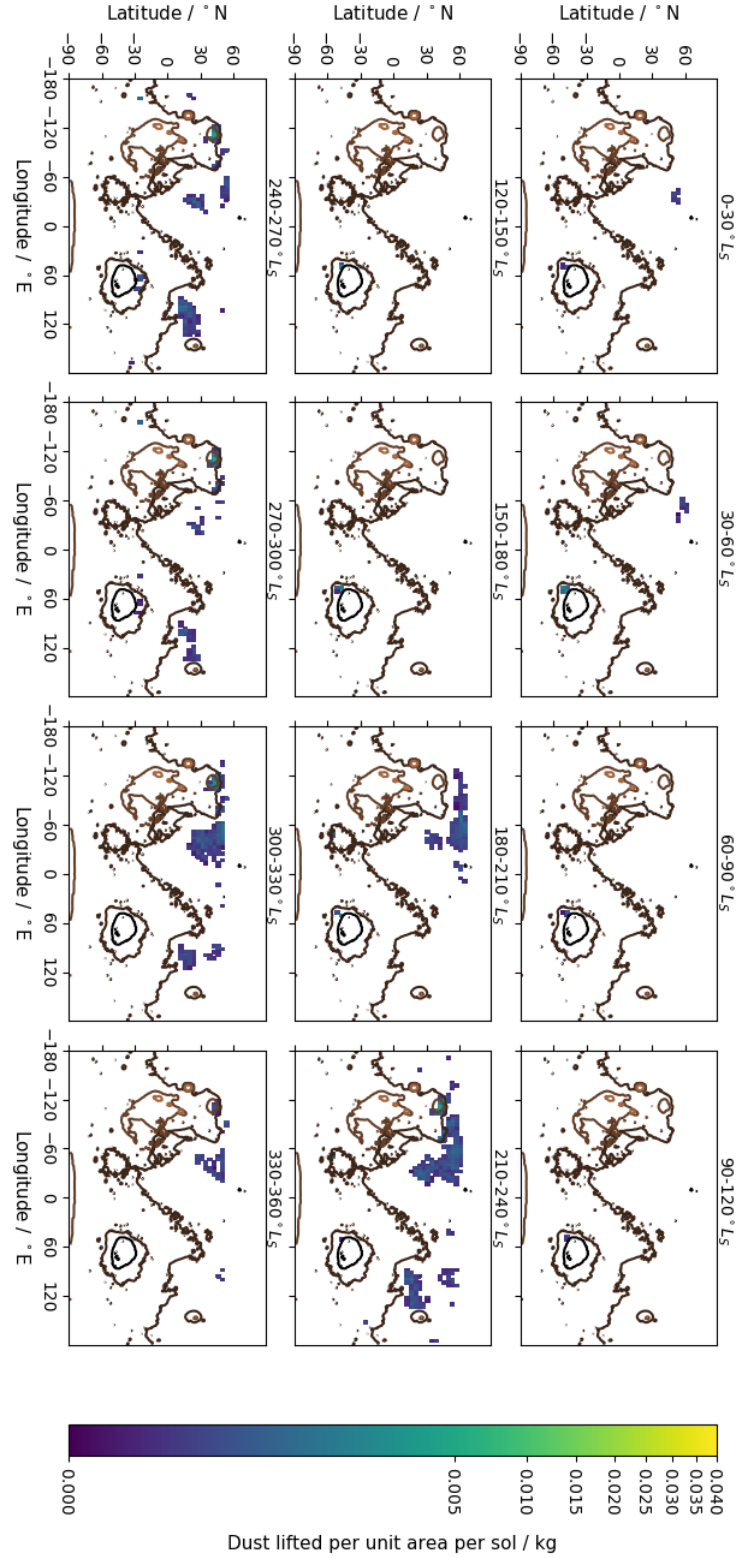


Figure 4.3: As Figure 4.2 for a T42 experiment.

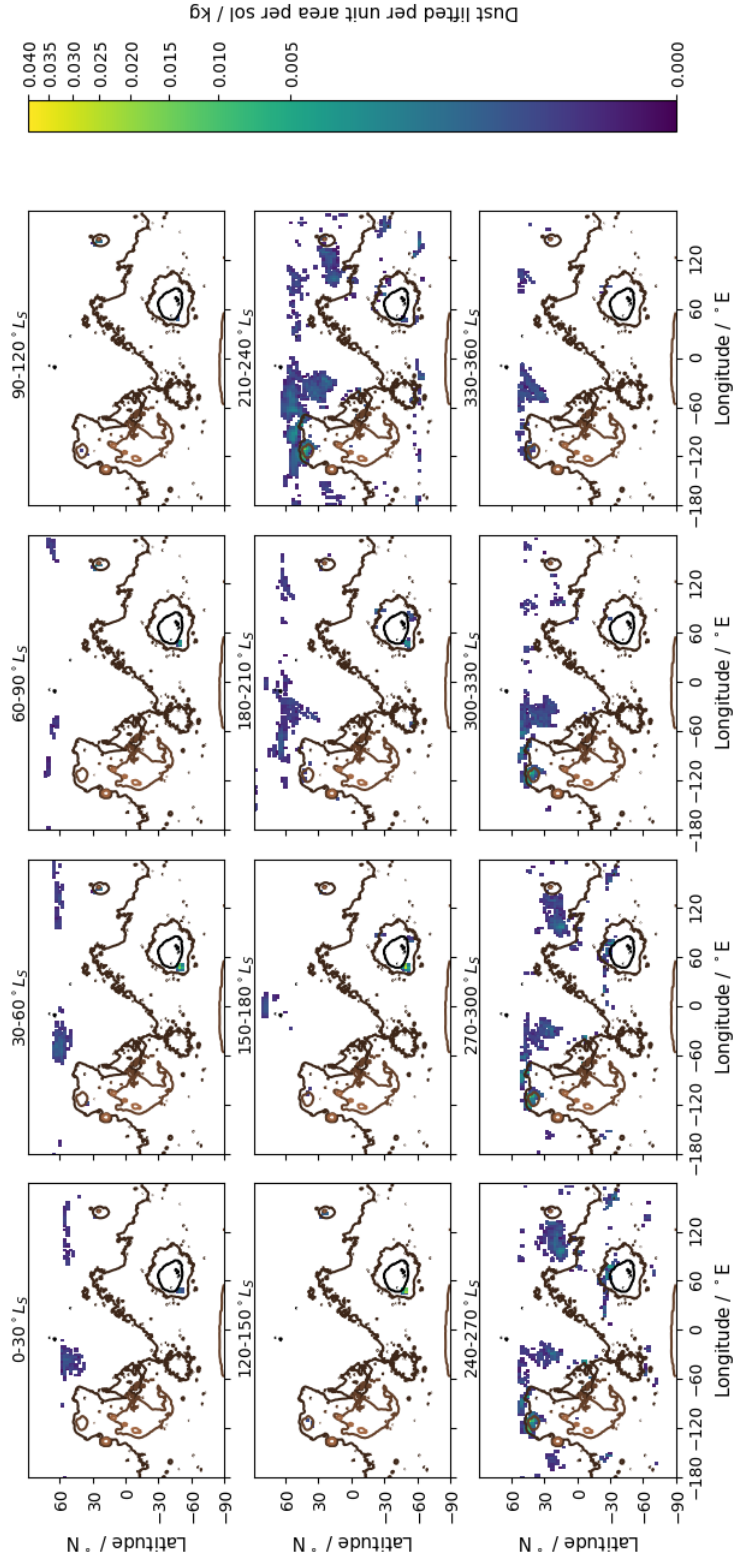


Figure 4.4: As Figure 4.2 for a T63 experiment.

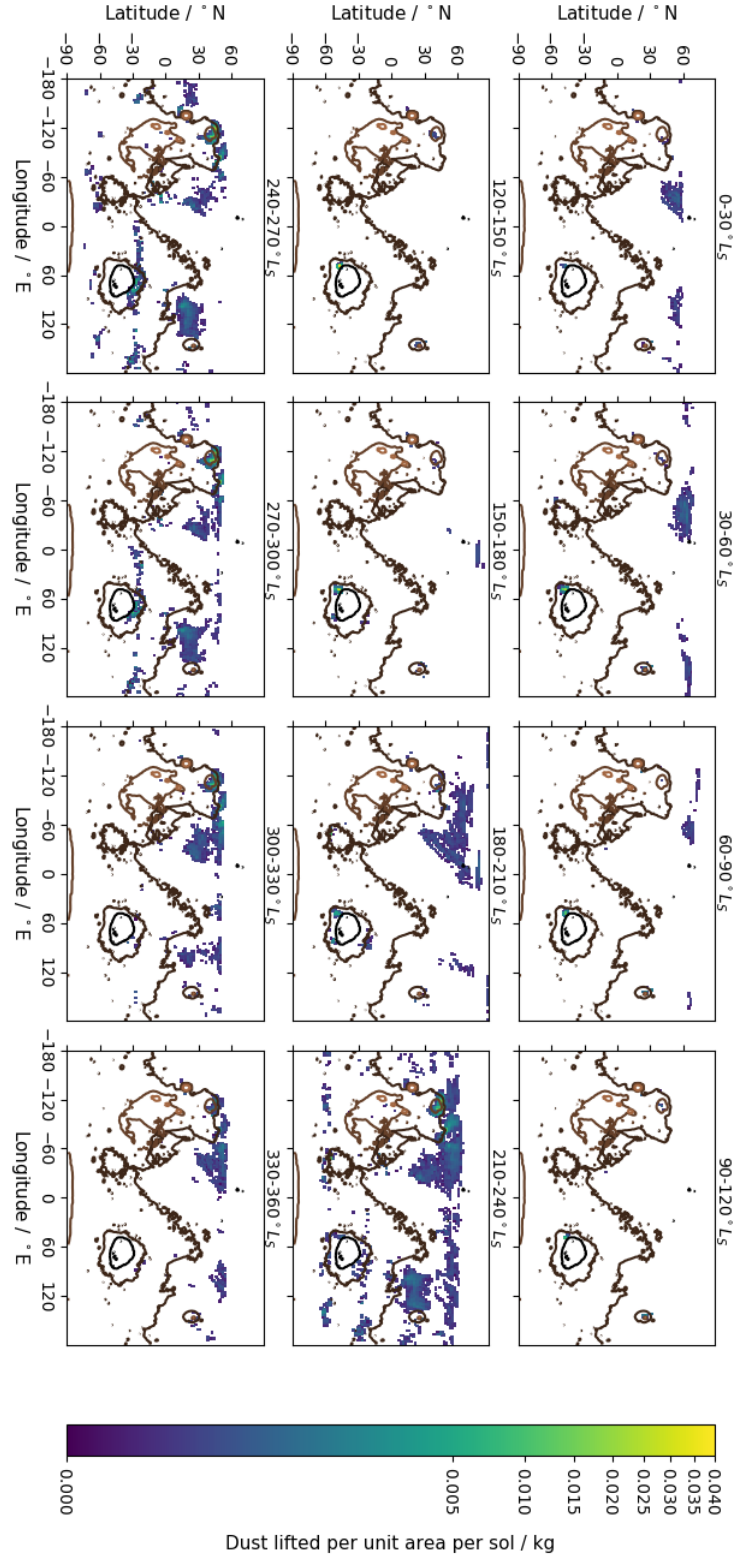


Figure 4.5: As Figure 4.2 for a T85 experiment.

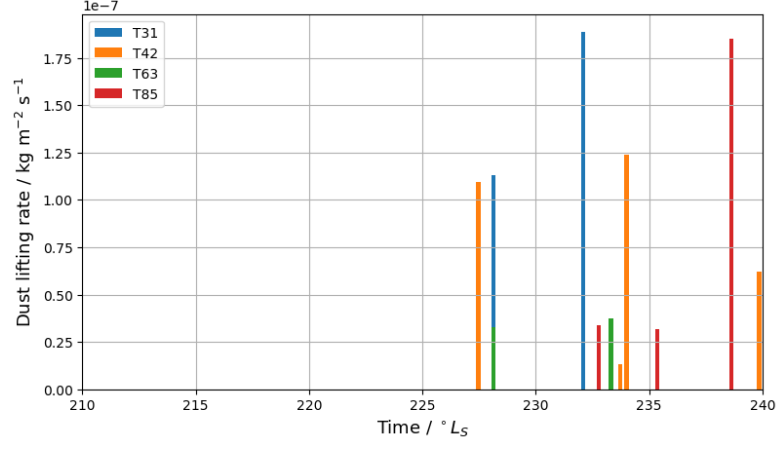


Figure 4.6: The dust lifting rate at an example surface location (30° N, -30° E) in experiments completed across a range of horizontal resolutions, through the period 210 - $240^\circ L_S$.

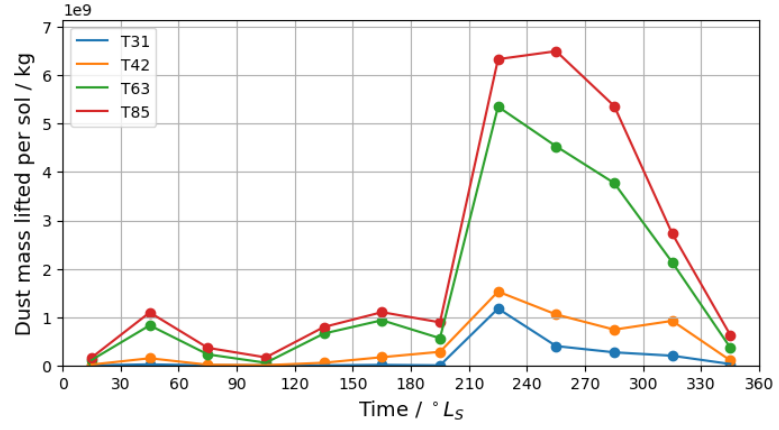


Figure 4.7: The dust mass lifted globally during each $L_S = 30^\circ$ -long period of the Martian year, normalised by the number of sols in each period, for each horizontal resolution. Plot lines added only to help the reader to follow each experimental result.

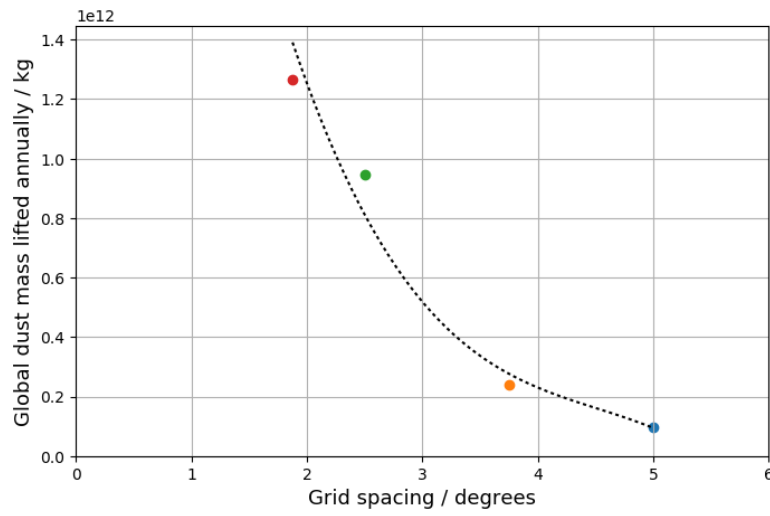


Figure 4.8: Annual, global total lifted dust mass against horizontal physical grid spacing. Resolution increases from right to left: T31 $\sim 5^\circ$, T42 $\sim 3.75^\circ$, T63 $\sim 2.5^\circ$, T85 $\sim 1.875^\circ$ (colours correspond to those used in Figure 4.7). Dotted line indicates trendline of $y = 7 \times 10^{12} e^{-0.862x}$.

1141 4.3.2 Changing the Vertical Resolution

1142 Global plots of dust lifting through a Martian year are shown in Figures 4.9 to
 1143 4.11, using the same colour indications as in the previous global plots. These
 1144 plots show dust lifting across increasing vertical resolutions: 35 vertical layers
 1145 (Figure 4.9), 60 vertical layers (Figure 4.10), and 100 vertical layers (Figure
 1146 4.11). Further experiments were completed, as listed in Table 4.2; these plots
 1147 are included here as examples. (All experiments were completed at the T31
 1148 horizontal resolution.)

1149 The data shown in Figures 4.9 to 4.11 are plotted in Figure 4.12 as the
 1150 amount of lifted dust in each $L_S = 30^\circ$ period through the year (normalised by
 1151 the number of sols in each period), for each resolution. This plot includes all
 1152 the vertical resolutions used in this work.

1153 Figure 4.13 shows the annual, global sum of lifted dust mass against increas-
 1154 ing resolution.

1155 4.3.3 Summary

1156 Increasing the horizontal resolution of the MGCM increases the amount of dust
 1157 lifted by NSWs. The geographical distribution of dust lifting changes with in-
 1158 creased model resolution: lifting is more widespread in experiments completed
 1159 at higher resolutions.

1160 Increasing the vertical resolution of the MGCM also tends to increase the
 1161 amount of dust lifted by NSWs, and to increase the geographical distribution of
 1162 dust lifting. However, the relationship between resolution and mass lifted/area
 1163 of lifting is not as straightforward as in the horizontal case, particularly with
 1164 regard to the results from the experiments completed at the highest resolutions.

1165 In both sets of experiments there is a seasonal trend in dust lifting that is
 1166 relatively consistent across increasing resolution: more dust is lifted during the
 1167 SH summer months, i.e. through perihelion.

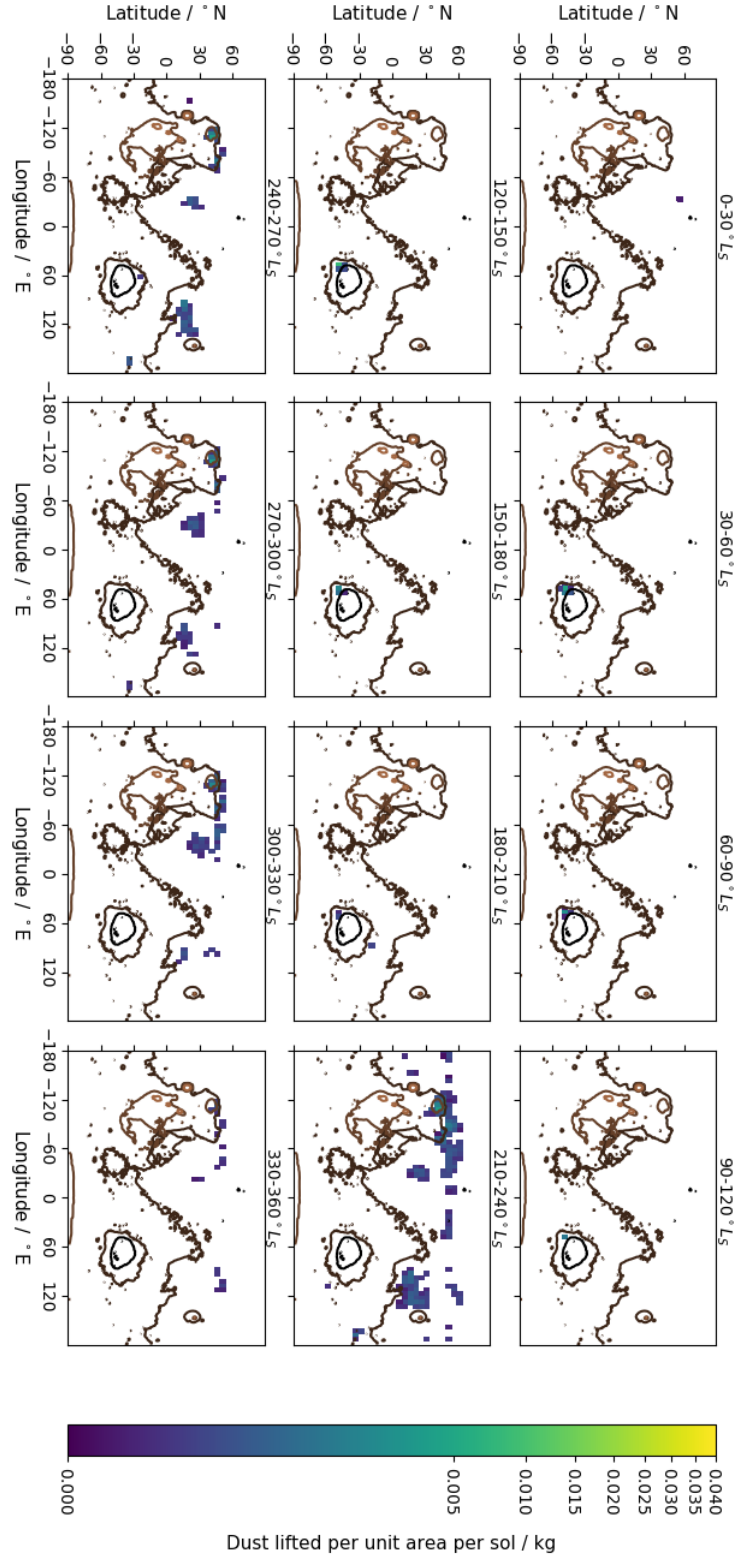


Figure 4.9: Global dust lifting by NSWs in a [T31]L35 experiment. Colour-scheme as for Figure 4.2.

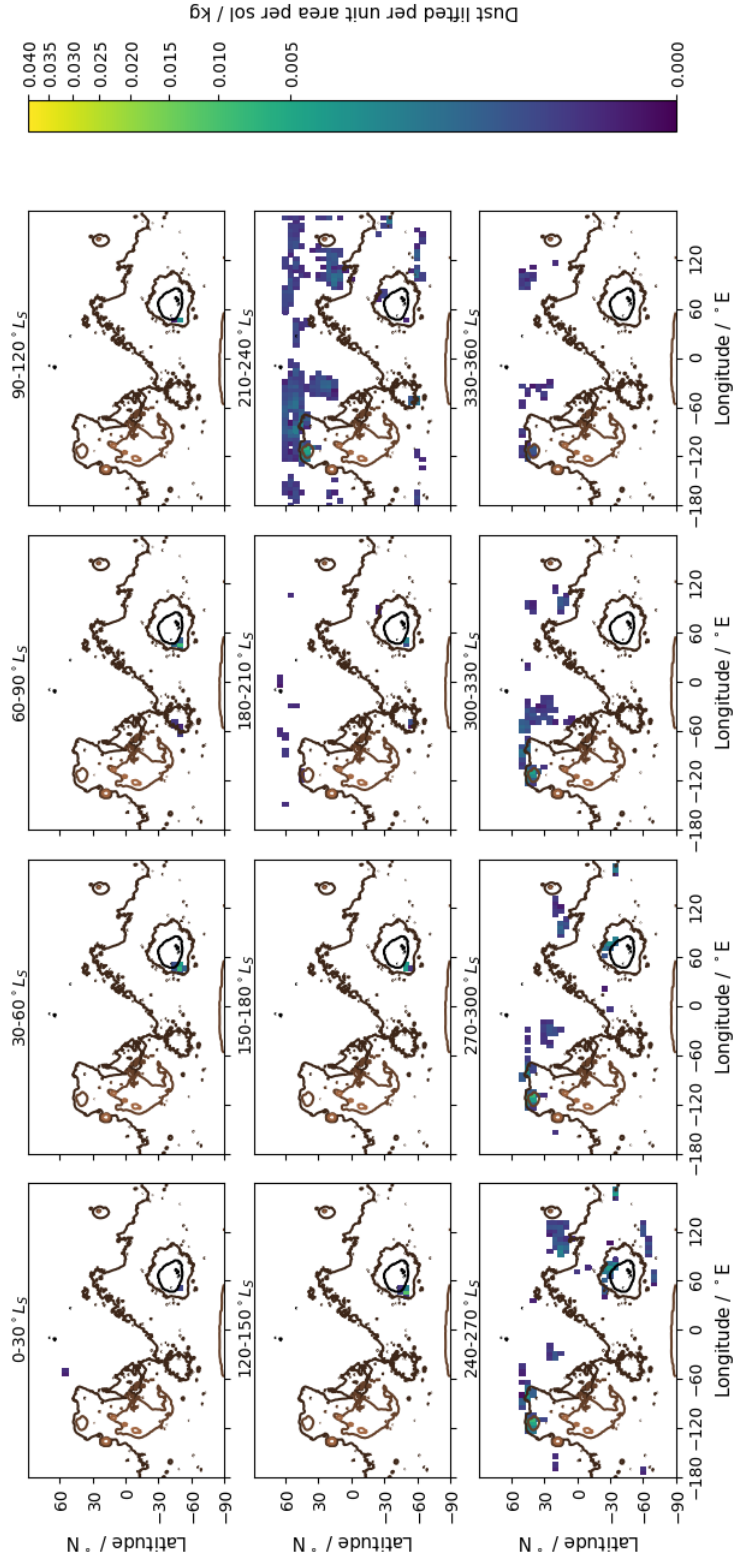


Figure 4.10: As Figure 4.9 for an L60 experiment.

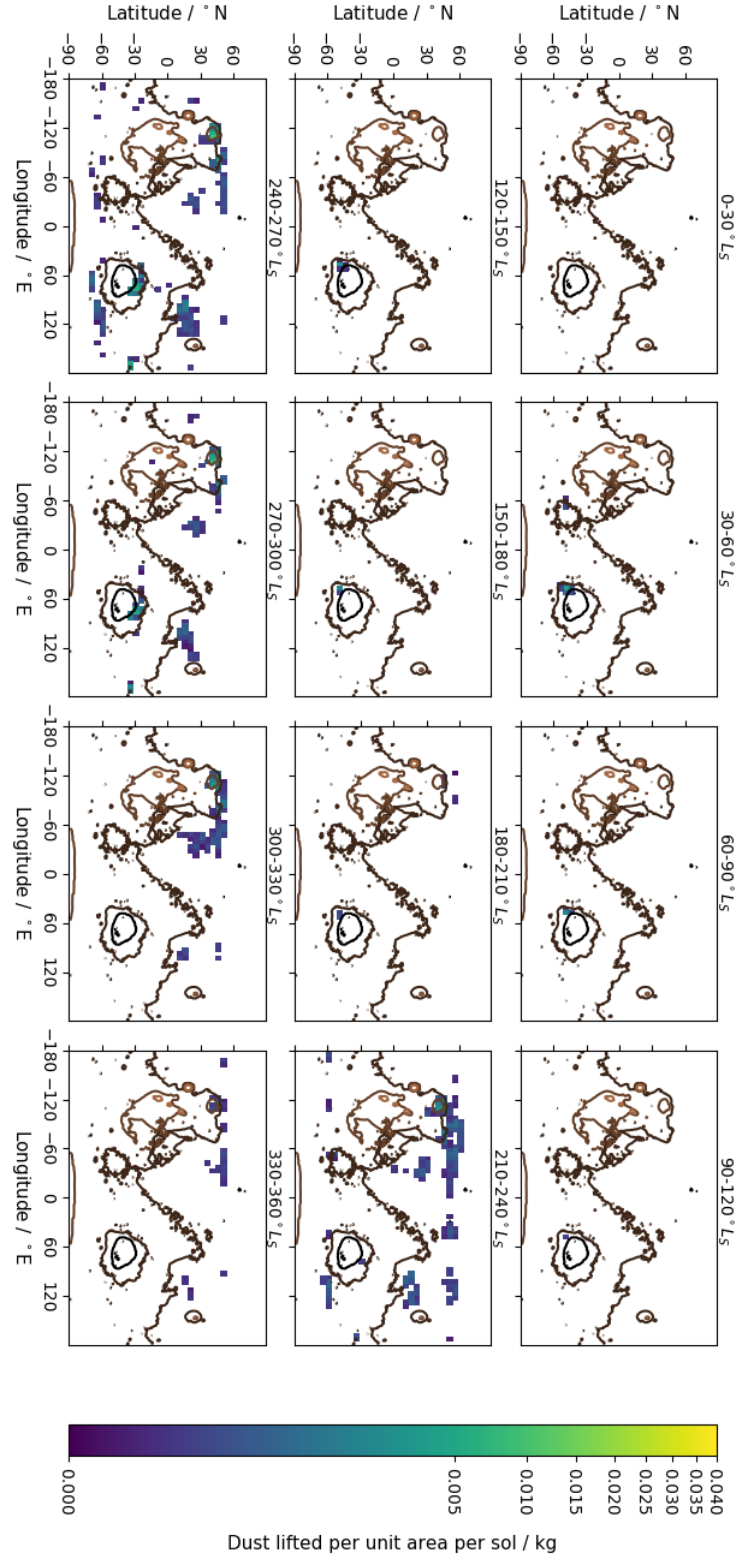


Figure 4.11: As Figure 4.9 for an L100 experiment.

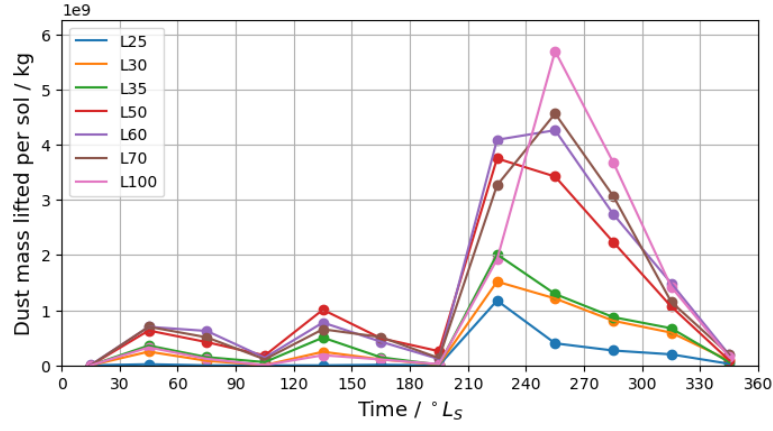


Figure 4.12: The dust mass lifted globally during each $L_S = 30^\circ$ -long period of the Martian year, normalised by the number of sols in each period, for each vertical resolution. Plot lines added only to help the reader to follow each experimental result.

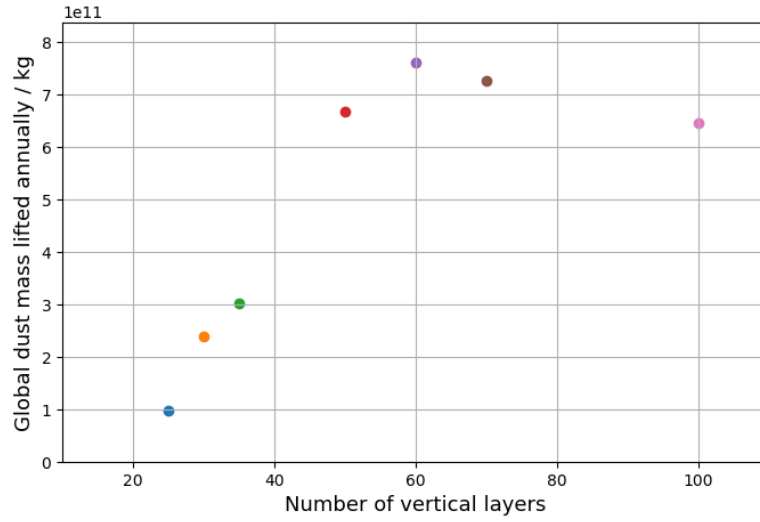


Figure 4.13: Annual, global total lifted dust mass against increasing vertical resolution. (Colours correspond to those used in Figure 4.12).

1168 4.4 Discussion

1169 4.4.1 Comparison with Observations

1170 While this work is concerned with the model’s response to changing resolution, it
 1171 is important to compare the results with observations of Mars. The correlation
 1172 between surface dust lifting by NSWS and the formation of dust storms can
 1173 be exploited for this comparison: global maps of observed surface dust lifting
 1174 cannot be compiled, but maps of dust storm observations can.

1175 A catalogue of 89 dust storm observations was compiled using several pub-
 1176 lished dust storm surveys as sources for storm locations: *Cantor et al.* (2001);
 1177 *Wang* (2007); *Wang and Fisher* (2009); *Cantor et al.* (2010); *Hinson and Wang*
 1178 (2010); *Wang and Richardson* (2015). These studies all use observations made
 1179 from orbit (using MOC on MGS or MARCI on MRO) and the majority of
 1180 storms identified are ‘regional storms’ as defined by *Cantor et al.* (2001), i.e.
 1181 covering an area of at least $1.6 \times 10^6 \text{ km}^2$ and lasting at least two sols. These
 1182 studies cover an observational period from MY24 to MY30.

1183 Figure 4.14 shows maps of T31L25 dust lifting (the horizontal and vertical
 1184 resolutions in a ‘typical’ climate model) overlain onto the locations of the cata-
 1185 logued storm observations. The dust lifting colour indications and scale are the
 1186 same as in the previous global maps (refer back to Figure 4.2).

1187 The first point to consider is the general match between storm observations
 1188 and modelled dust lifting. There is some correlation between observations and
 1189 dust lifting across experiments completed at all resolutions. Two examples of
 1190 this can be seen during a period soon after aphelion and a period approach-
 1191 ing perihelion. During the near-aphelion period of $L_S = 90\text{-}120^\circ$ there are no
 1192 observations of dust storms recorded; data across all modelled resolutions dis-
 1193 play limited or zero dust lifting through this period. In the $L_S = 210\text{-}240^\circ$
 1194 period approaching perihelion there are a number of widely-spread observations
 1195 of storms; data from all modelled resolutions display dust lifting during this
 1196 period of the year in regions that correlate with storms observed in the NH.

1197 The second point to consider is the geographical change in lifting patterns
 1198 with resolution. Through the perihelion period of $L_S = 210\text{-}270^\circ$ storms have
 1199 been observed in SH locations with latitudes around -60° N . The dust lifting

depicted in the T31L25 experiment (Figure 4.14) does not match these observations, but there is a match with modelled dust lifting produced in experiments completed at both higher horizontal resolutions (T63, T85) and higher vertical resolutions (L60, L100); compare Figures 4.4, 4.5, 4.10, and 4.11.

A similar trend is seen during the period of $L_S = 0-60^\circ$ (NH spring), during which there have been a small number of observed storms with latitudes around 50° N; the lowest horizontal resolution experiment (T31) does not show any dust lifting in this region during this period, but the T42, T63 and T85 experiments show increasing amounts of dust lifting in similar NH locations to the storm observations. In this instance, increasing the vertical resolution of the model did not produce a similar change in dust lifting.

These results suggest strongly that experiments completed at mid- to high-resolution generate more representative surface dust lifting patterns than lower resolution simulations, at least for certain times of year. The improved representation gained by increasing the vertical resolution does not have the same temporal breadth as the improvement gained by increasing the horizontal resolution (i.e. regarding NH spring), for the resolutions tested.

A final point to consider in this comparison is that some parts of the year contain storm observations that do not match with any of the experimental results: the storms observed during the period of $L_S = 120-180^\circ$ (late NH summer/SH winter) do not correlate with strong dust lifting regions exhibited in the results obtained at any resolution. This limitation of the model should be noted for future experiments, but it will not be explored further within this work.

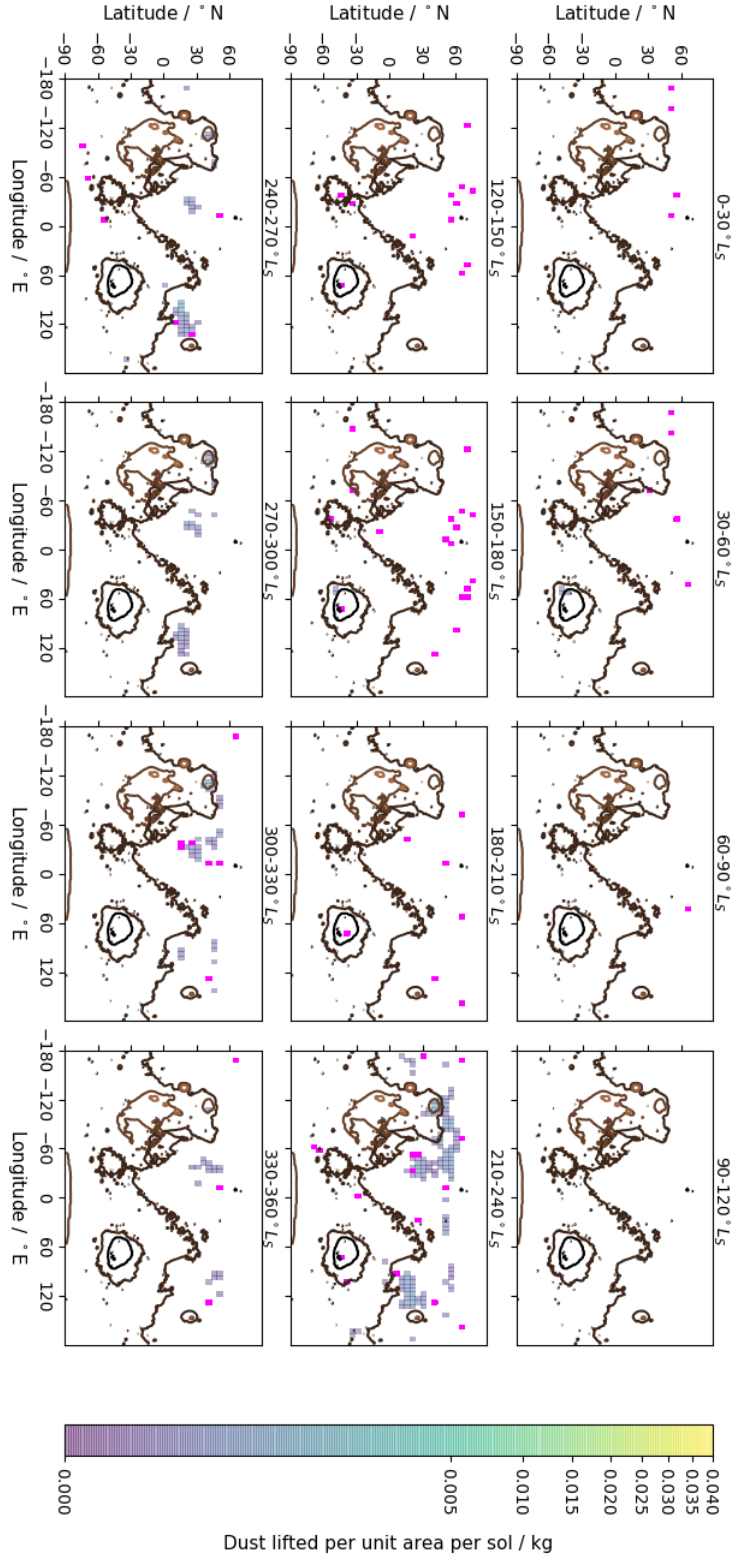


Figure 4.14: The locations of dust storm observations through the period MY24-30, marked in pink. Modelled dust lifting data are that shown in Figure 4.2, colour-faded to enhance visibility of storm observations.

1224 4.4.2 Dust Lifting in Horizontal Resolution Experiments

1225 Increasing the horizontal resolution of the MGCM experiments increases the
 1226 amount of dust lifted by NSWs: refer back to Figure 4.8, in which the total
 1227 amount of dust lifted annually is plotted against horizontal grid spacing.

1228 As the horizontal resolution of a simulation is increased, an improved rep-
 1229 resentation of the planet’s surface properties can be used. A more detailed
 1230 representation of surface topography in the experiments improves the depiction
 1231 of local slopes, and small-scale variations in albedo and thermal inertia. This
 1232 leads to a better representation of small-scale variability within the near-surface
 1233 wind, through the improved modelling of local slope winds, such as daytime,
 1234 upslope anabatic flows and night-time, downslope katabatic flows. This effect
 1235 is most pronounced in regions where terrain height varies by a large amount
 1236 across a relatively small distance, such as deep valleys or basins, or at the edge
 1237 of seasonal CO₂ polar caps. These local winds also interact with larger scale
 1238 tides, affecting near-surface winds across the planet.

1239 Dust is lifted from a planet’s surface when the near-surface wind is strong
 1240 enough to overcome any forces holding the dust on to the surface. Within the
 1241 MGCM parameterisation, dust lifting occurs when the friction velocity of the
 1242 wind is greater than a threshold velocity ($u^* > u_t^*$; see Section 3.5.1). This
 1243 friction velocity is calculated from the near-surface wind velocity (Equation
 1244 3.11).

1245 Although increasing the horizontal resolution does not affect the calculation
 1246 of the threshold velocity, the changes in near-surface wind speeds affect the
 1247 friction velocity acting upon dust on the surface. Figure 4.15 shows example
 1248 surface plots of the threshold velocity (u_t^*) calculated in T31L25 and T85L25
 1249 experiments: the geographical pattern and magnitude of this threshold value
 1250 is similar between the plots, despite the change in resolution. In contrast, the
 1251 surface plots of friction velocity (u^*) in Figure 4.16 show how changing the
 1252 resolution – improving the representation of local slopes and thus local winds –
 1253 produces velocities of greater geographical complexity and larger magnitude.

1254 The shape of the plot shown in Figure 4.8 allows the calculation of an ex-
 1255 ponential trendline: $y = 7 \times 10^{12} e^{-0.862x}$. This plot allows future users of the

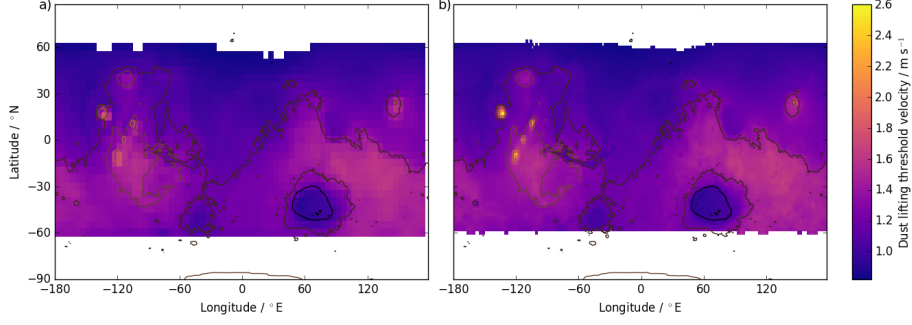


Figure 4.15: Example surface plot of the threshold velocity, u_t^* , in experiments of different resolutions: a) T31L25 and b) T85L25. Data are from $L_S \sim 210^\circ$. (White areas indicate regions for which this value was not calculated: dust lifting was prevented in these areas by overlying CO_2 ice.)

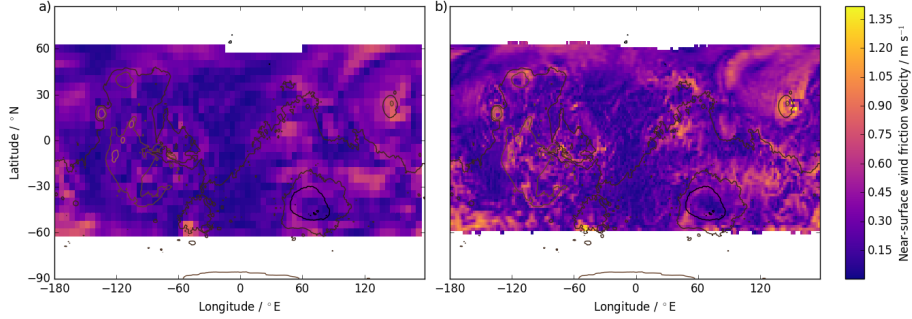


Figure 4.16: As Figure 4.15, but showing the friction velocity, u^* .

model to make an informed decision on the suitability of a particular resolution with regards to surface-level processes, albeit with the caveat that further work is recommended in order to extend the series to even higher resolutions in order to confirm this trend. Such work would not be trivial: see Section 4.5 for a discussion on the very highest horizontal resolution experiments completed within the current investigation.

Seasonal Dust Lifting

The amount of dust lifted in the horizontal resolution experiments is shown in Figure 4.7 for each modelled $L_S = 30^\circ$ -long section of the Martian year. A seasonal trend is evident across all resolutions: more dust is lifted during the SH summer months, $L_S = 180\text{--}360^\circ$. This was expected, assuming that the model is a reasonable representation of the Martian atmosphere: observations

of dust storms increase during this period (the ‘dust storm season’, see Section 2.3), indicating that more dust lifting should be present from which these storms can form. This plot shows clearly that the seasonal trend in this dust lifting is consistent across resolutions, despite changes in resolution affecting the absolute amount of dust lifted.

Dust Lifting Patterns

As described in Section 4.4.1, the geographical distribution of dust lifting changes with increased model resolution. Two periods of the year have been selected for a deeper study of this behaviour: the early NH spring period of $L_S = 30\text{-}60^\circ$, in which the experiments at all resolutions show limited dust lifting, and the near-perihelion period of $L_S = 210\text{-}240^\circ$, in which all the experiments show large amounts of dust lifting.

Figure 4.17 shows the dust lifting patterns through the period $L_S = 30\text{-}60^\circ$ from all the horizontal resolution experiments. The lowest resolution experiment, T31, shows very limited dust lifting during this period, with only one active dust lifting location at the western edge of Hellas Basin; all the higher resolution experiments also display lifting in this location. The higher resolution experiments also display areas of dust lifting in the NH, primarily in the Acidalia (circa 60° N, -60° E) and Utopia (circa 60° N, 140° E) regions, with the area across which dust is lifted tending to increase with increasing resolution.

Figure 4.18 shows peak near-surface wind speeds through this modelled period. The areas of NH dust lifting displayed in Figure 4.17 correlate with locations exhibiting high peak wind speeds at the higher resolutions in Figure 4.18; e.g. within the Acidalia region, peak wind speeds reach $\sim 21 \text{ m s}^{-1}$ in the T85 experiment, compared with $\sim 13 \text{ m s}^{-1}$ in the T31 experiment. This location in particular has been termed a ‘storm zone’ (Hollingsworth *et al.*, 1996; Lewis *et al.*, 2016) in recognition of the number of storms observed to form here.

Section 4.4.1 identified that storms have been observed at this time of year in the latitude band around 50° N. Through this period of the year, the seasonal CO_2 polar cap retreats from around 50° N to around 70° N. This area of dust lifting is caused by local winds associated with the edge of this polar cap – winds that are not well-represented at the lower model resolutions. This polar edge

cap effect can also be seen in the first three panels in both Figure 4.5 and Figure 4.4: the dust lifting regions shift further north through the successive periods $L_S = 0-30^\circ$, $L_S = 30-60^\circ$, and $L_S = 60-90^\circ$, following the retreat of the cap edge.

Figure 4.19 shows the dust lifting patterns of all the horizontal resolution experiments through the period $L_S = 210-240^\circ$. Large regions of NH dust lifting are evident across all resolutions, e.g. Acidalia, the northern edge of Ascuris Planum (circa 60° N, -120° E), and east of Cerberus (circa 20° N, 110° E). However, the T63 and T85 experiments again show regions of lifting in both the NH and SH that are not captured at the lower resolutions: along latitudes of around 60° N and -60° N.

Figure 4.20 shows peak near-surface wind speeds through this modelled period: a narrow, longitudinal band of higher peak wind speeds is evident around -60° N in the higher resolution experiments, particularly T85. Within this band, peak wind speeds reach $\sim 21 \text{ m s}^{-1}$ in the T85 experiment, compared with only $\sim 14 \text{ m s}^{-1}$ in the T31 experiment.

Section 4.4.1 identified storm observations through this period of the year in a SH latitude band around -60° N. Mirroring the period earlier in the year, this latitude is associated with the annual retreat of the seasonal southern CO_2 polar cap, suggesting that local winds associated with cap edge topography and albedo variation are driving lifting in this region. There is not such a clear difference in peak wind speeds in the NH to account for the band of lifting around 60° N, but the northern CO_2 polar cap extends to around 65° N at the beginning of this $L_S = 30^\circ$ -long period, correlating with the lifting regions.

Increasing the horizontal resolution of the MGCM improves the geographical distribution of dust lifting, producing a better representation of the range and distribution of the dust lifting regions: compare the lifting patterns in the highest and lowest resolution panels of Figures 4.17 and 4.18 with the storm observation map in Figure 4.14. The rate at which this improvement occurs appears to slow with increasing resolution: the change in dust lifting patterns from T31 to T42 is more distinct than that from T63 to T85.

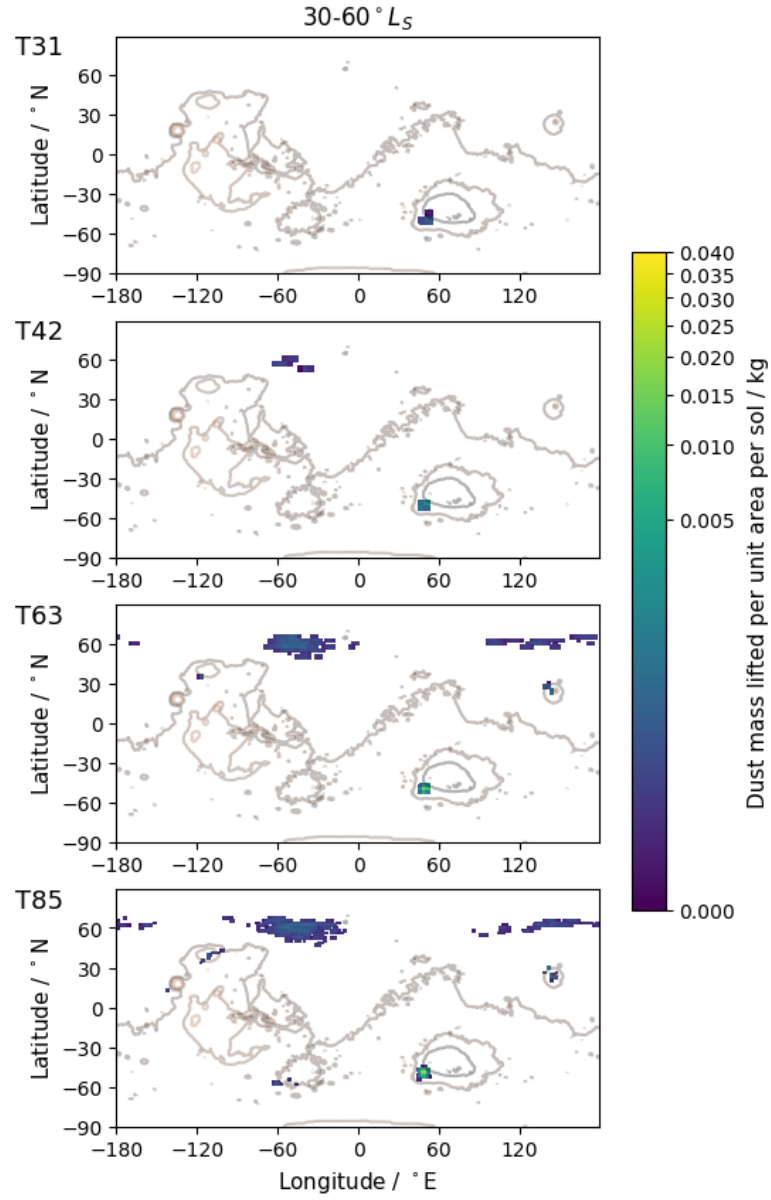


Figure 4.17: Surface dust lifting through the period $L_S = 30-60^\circ$, for the four horizontal resolution experiments. Colour-scheme as for Figure 4.2.

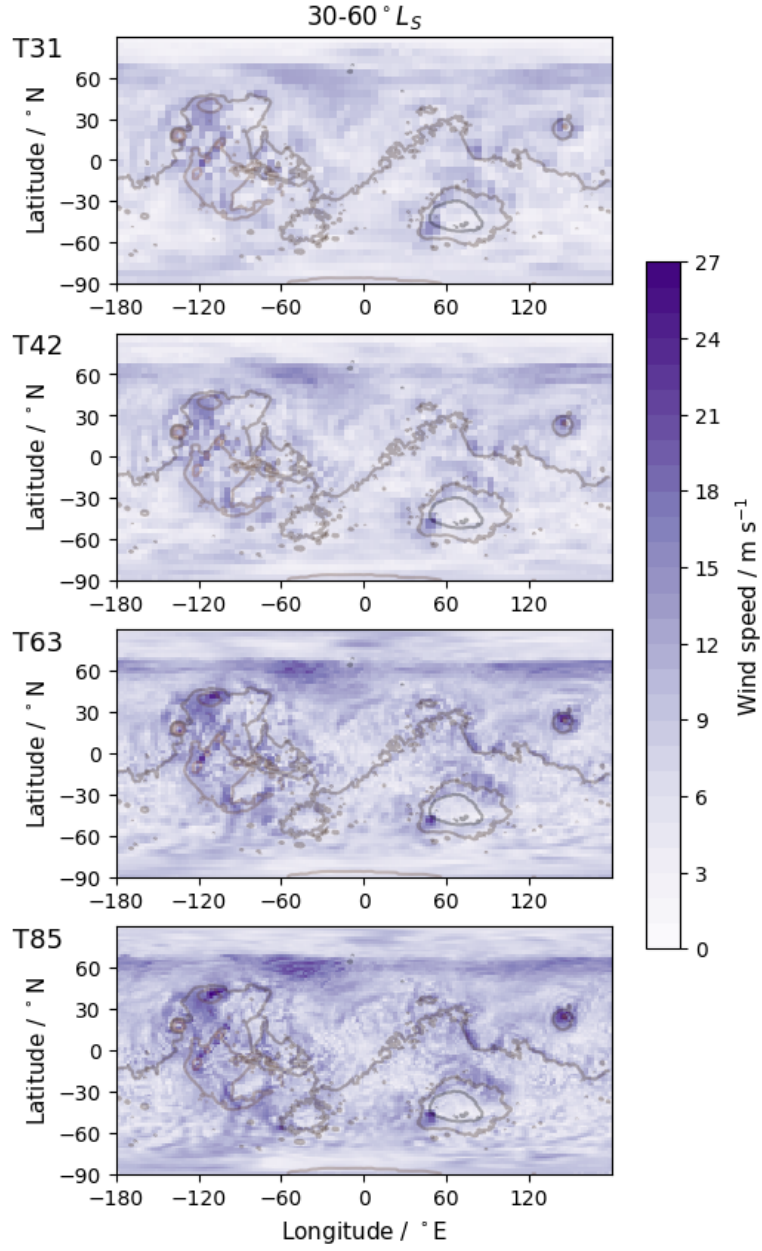


Figure 4.18: Peak near-surface wind speeds through the period $L_S = 30-60^\circ$, for the four horizontal resolution experiments.

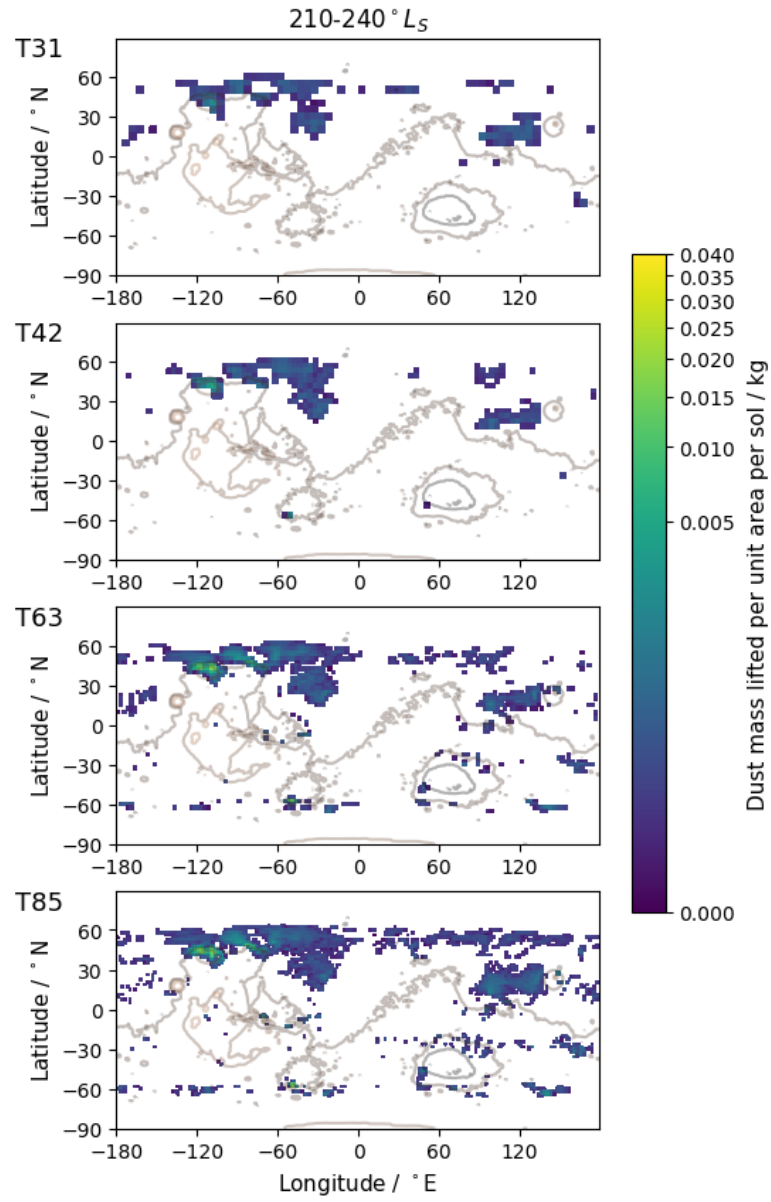


Figure 4.19: As Figure 4.17, for the period $L_S = 210-240^\circ$.

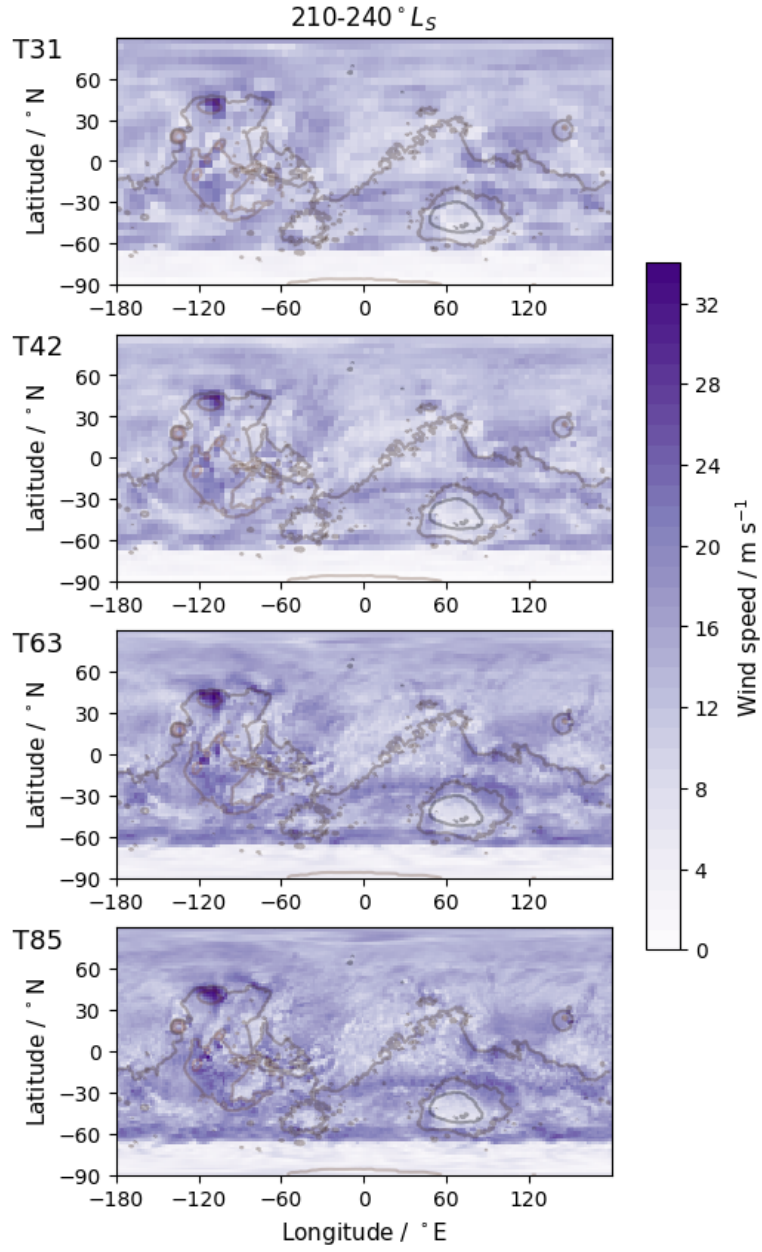


Figure 4.20: As Figure 4.18, for the period $L_S = 210-240^\circ$.

1331 **Peak Wind Speeds**

1332 Figure 4.21 shows a box-and-whisker plot of the global peak near-surface wind
 1333 speeds through the period $L_S = 30\text{-}60^\circ$. As resolution increases, the median
 1334 value of each peak wind population also increases. Of particular relevance to
 1335 dust lifting is that the outliers associated with the highest peak wind speeds
 1336 are more numerous as resolution increases, and reach higher magnitudes. It is
 1337 these outlier values that achieve the speeds necessary for dust to be lifted.

1338 Figure 4.22 shows the same style of plot for the period $L_S = 210\text{-}240^\circ$.
 1339 The trend of increasing peak wind speeds with increasing resolution is not as
 1340 unambiguous in these data. Firstly, the T42 median value is slightly lower than
 1341 that of the T31 data; however, the T42 data contain more outliers at the higher
 1342 speeds required for dust lifting. Secondly, the T63 and T85 data are much more
 1343 similar in their distributions than at the earlier point in the year, although the
 1344 T85 median is still higher, and the T85 data contain more high speed outliers.
 1345 The effect of this similarity in wind speed distributions was evident in the plots
 1346 showing dust lifting through the length of the experimental year (Figure 4.7)
 1347 and the total dust lifted annually (Figure 4.8): T63 results are more similar
 1348 to T85 results than to those at the lower resolutions, even though the delta in
 1349 resolution is similar across each resolution increase.

1350 When the geographical lifting patterns are considered, it is evident that the
 1351 experiment completed at the T63 resolution is able to resolve dust lifting at
 1352 polar cap edges in both the NH and SH that the lower resolution experiments
 1353 could not. The T85 experiment improves on the representation of wind speeds
 1354 (and therefore dust lifting) in these regions, but it is the inclusion of this lifting
 1355 where it had previously been absent that makes the largest difference in the
 1356 aforementioned plots. At these latitudes, a T63 experiment is able to resolve
 1357 features of lengths below 100 km, while a T42 experiment can resolve features
 1358 closer to 150 km in length. This suggests that the facility to resolve surface fea-
 1359 tures of the order of 100 km improves the representation of dust lifting within
 1360 the MGCM. Future work in this area could explore this finding further by cor-
 1361 relating these lifting areas with a topographical and geologic survey of these
 1362 Martian latitudes.

1363 It is also possible there is a degree of uncertainty across the results: an
1364 examination of Figure 4.7, with consideration to the posited line of best fit,
1365 allows for the possibility that the T42 result discussed here could be a lower-
1366 than-average result for such a resolution; the T63 result could be a higher-than-
1367 average result. Computing time and data storage constraints did not allow for
1368 a comprehensive exploration of the uncertainties involved within the results of
1369 long-term simulations at high resolutions. This would also be an interesting
1370 topic for future study.

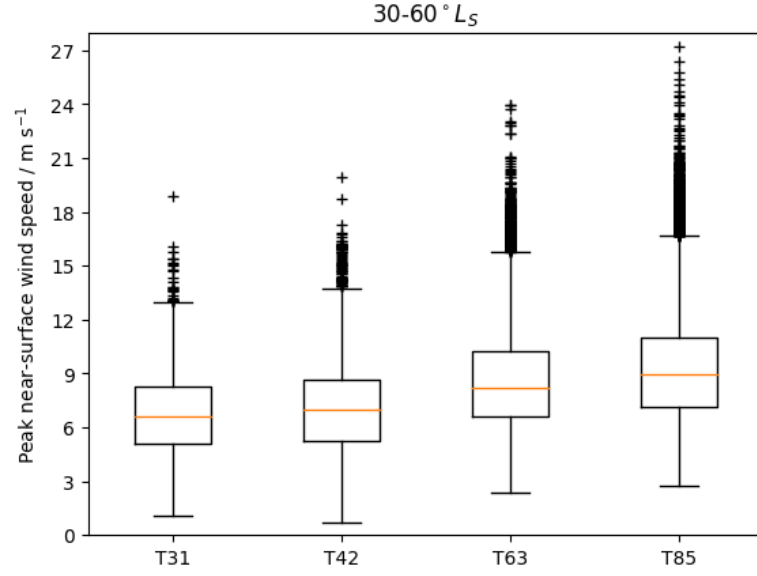


Figure 4.21: Box-and-whisker plot of peak near-surface wind speeds through the period $L_S = 30\text{-}60^\circ$, across horizontal resolution experiments. Orange lines denote the median of each distribution, the box encompasses the Q1 to Q3 interquartile range (IQR); outlier values are those beyond the standard ' $Q_n \pm 1.5 \times \text{IQR}$ ' whisker length.

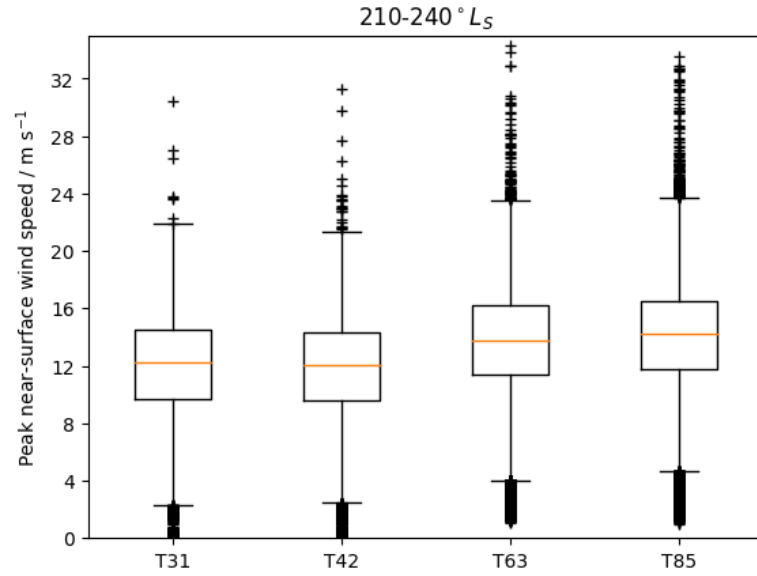


Figure 4.22: As Figure 4.21, for the period $L_S = 210\text{-}240^\circ$.

1371 4.4.3 Dust Lifting in Vertical Resolution Experiments

1372 Increasing the vertical resolution of the MGCM experiments tends to increase
 1373 the amount of dust lifted by NSWs. In contrast with the direct correlation in
 1374 the horizontal resolution experiments, in the vertical resolution experiments this
 1375 trend only continues up to a certain number of vertical layers, see Figure 4.13;
 1376 past this point, experiments lift a reduced amount of dust.

1377 The seasonal trend for dust lifting identified previously can be seen again in
 1378 Figure 4.12: more dust is lifted during the SH summer months, $L_S = 180\text{-}360^\circ$,
 1379 across all vertical resolution experiments. However, this trend is not as simple
 1380 as in the case of the horizontal resolution experiments: the L70 experiment
 1381 lifts less dust in the period $L_S = 210\text{-}240^\circ$ than the L60 experiment; the L100
 1382 experiment lifts less dust again through this period.

1383 Dust Lifting Patterns

1384 While changing the horizontal resolution of the model resulted in a large change
 1385 in the geographical distribution of dust lifting, changing the vertical resolution
 1386 does not result in as widespread an effect. Figures 4.23 and 4.24 show dust lifting
 1387 through the periods $L_S = 210\text{-}240^\circ$ and $L_S = 240\text{-}270^\circ$ across four example
 1388 vertical resolution experiments, from the ‘standard’ L25, through a medium
 1389 resolution L35, a high resolution L60 and the very high resolution L100. (For
 1390 clarity and conciseness only these four vertical resolutions will be included in
 1391 the following discussion.)

1392 The general trend across these figures is that as resolution is increased,
 1393 more dust lifting regions are evident. During the later period, $L_S = 240\text{-}270^\circ$,
 1394 this trend is simple, with the L100 experiment showing the most widespread
 1395 dust lifting. However, during the earlier period, $L_S = 210\text{-}240^\circ$, the spread of
 1396 dust lifting in the L100 experiment is *less* than in the L60 experiment. This
 1397 complements the findings that the total amount of dust lifted during this period
 1398 is greatest in the L60 experiment: the $L_S = 210\text{-}240^\circ$ period is often the portion
 1399 of the Martian year during which the majority of dust lifting occurs within these
 1400 experiments.

1401 Increasing the vertical resolution of the MGCM does improve the geograph-

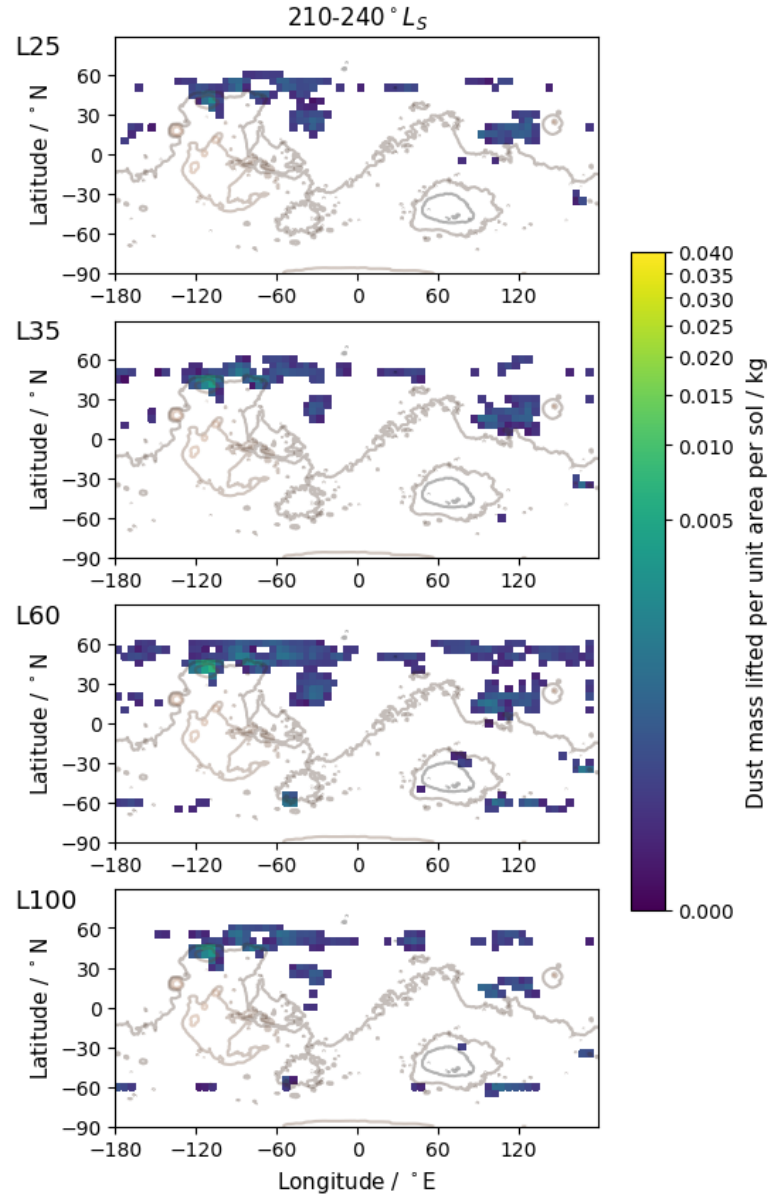
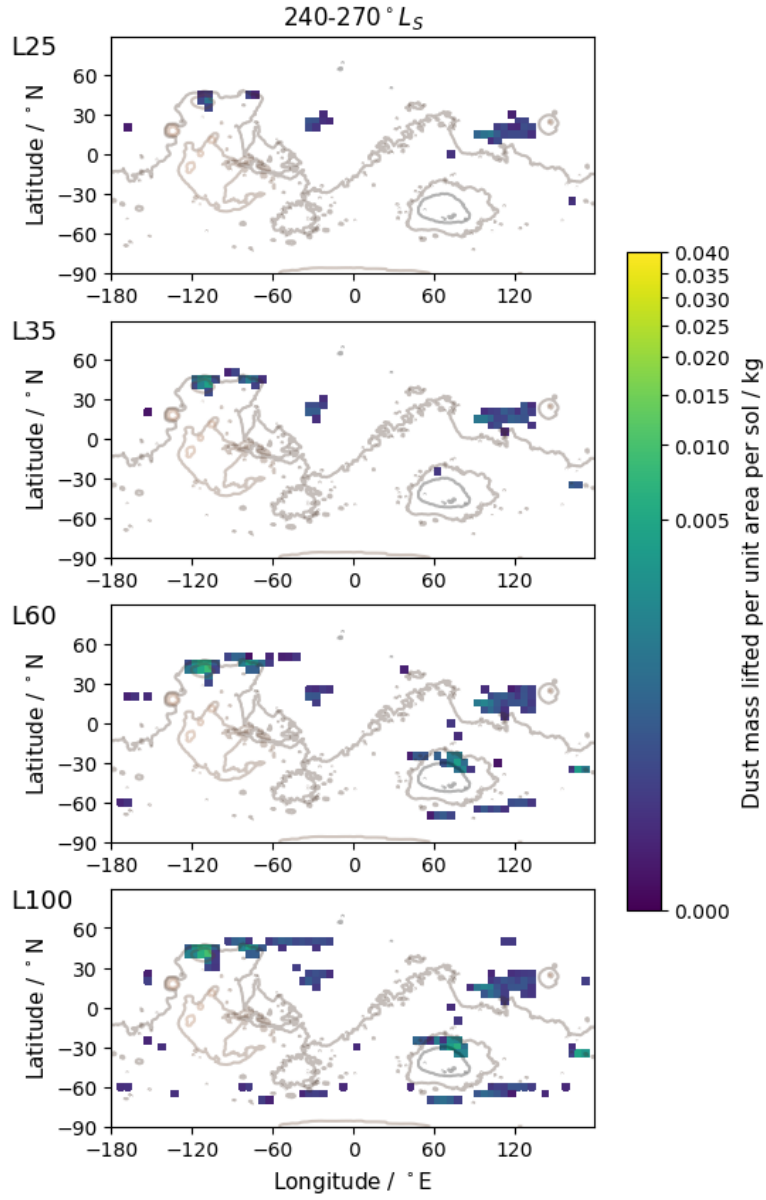


Figure 4.23: Surface dust lifting through the period $L_S = 210-240^\circ$, for four vertical resolution experiments. Colour-scheme as for Figure 4.2.

Figure 4.24: As Figure 4.23, for the period $L_S = 240-270^\circ$.

ical distribution of dust lifting, producing a better representation of the range and distribution of the dust lifting regions: compare the lifting patterns in the highest and lowest resolution panels of Figures 4.23 and 4.24 with the storm observation map in Figure 4.14.

Peak Wind Speeds

Figures 4.25 and 4.26 show differences in the peak horizontal near-surface wind speeds across the modelled surface during the periods $L_S = 210\text{-}240^\circ$ and $L_S = 240\text{-}270^\circ$; the difference in speed is taken from the results of the standard L25 experiment. Faster wind speeds can be identified clearly in some regions associated with higher dust lifting at the higher vertical resolutions. For example, peak wind speeds are $\sim 15 \text{ m s}^{-1}$ faster around -60° N , 110° E in the L60 results than in the L25 results, across both periods displayed here. As in the horizontal resolution experiments, the areas in which these higher wind speeds occur tend to correlate with seasonal polar cap edges.

To investigate how changing the vertical resolution affects wind speeds in the lower region of the atmosphere, vertical profiles of peak wind speed have been constructed. Peak wind speeds are considered rather than average wind speeds, as dust lifting only occurs in the presence of local peak wind speeds: the average wind speed does not produce a friction velocity that can overcome the lifting threshold.

Three vertical profiles of peak wind speeds during the period $L_S = 240\text{-}270^\circ$ are analysed below. The locations of these profiles were selected by considering the changing geographical patterns of dust lifting across resolution, as seen in Figure 4.24: a point at the southern CO_2 polar cap edge, associated with increased lifting with increased resolution (Profile A), a lowland NH point associated with lifting across all resolutions (Profile B), and an equatorial point in a region of mid-level terrain (Profile C). These locations are specified in Table 4.3 and mapped in Figure 4.27.

Figure 4.28 shows the vertical profiles at the identified locations, extracted from the experiments completed using 25, 35, 60 and 100 vertical layers; panels a), b) and c) show full height profiles, and panels d), e) and f) show the lowest $\sim 5 \text{ km}$ of the atmosphere. In general, the profiles are similar in shape for most

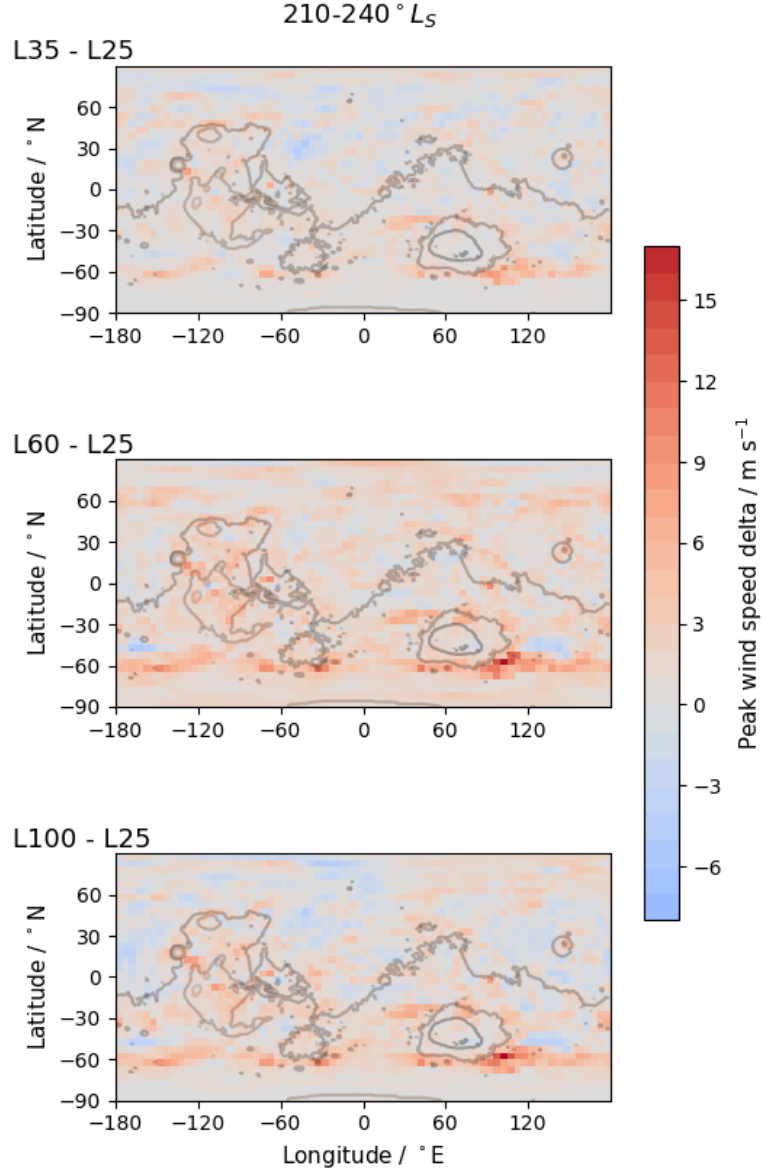


Figure 4.25: Difference in peak near-surface wind speeds across the Martian surface through the period $L_S = 210-240^\circ$. The difference is taken from the ‘standard’ L25 results.

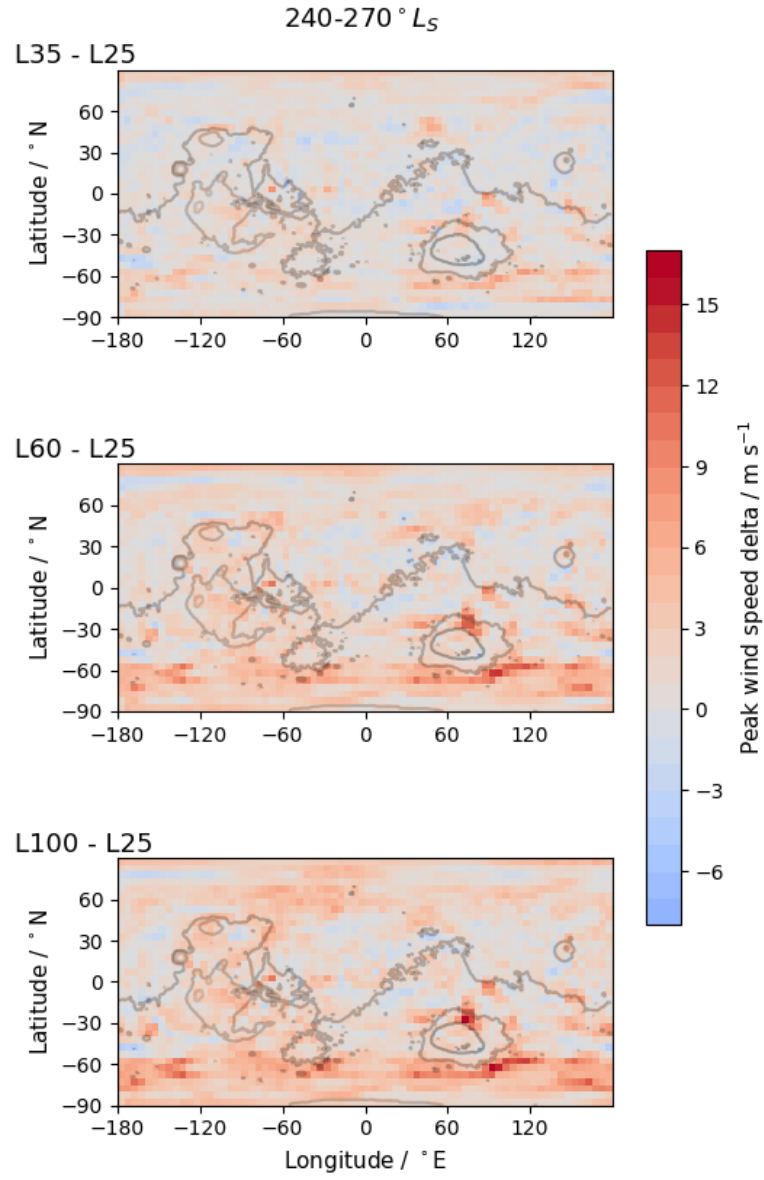


Figure 4.26: As Figure 4.25, for the period $L_S = 240-270^\circ$.

Profile label	Location (lat ° N, lon ° E)	Comment
A	-62.5, 115	Cap edge
B	22.5, -30	Lowlands region
C	0, 0	Equatorial location

Table 4.3: The locations of the studied vertical profiles.

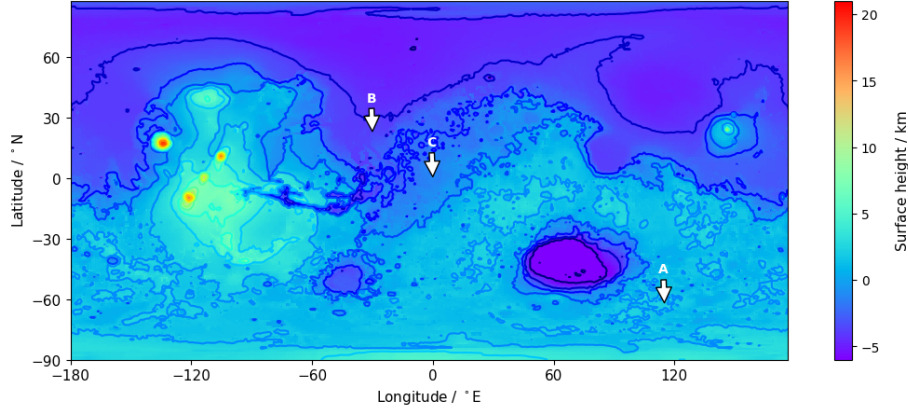


Figure 4.27: Global topography plot labelled with the locations of the studied vertical profiles listed in Table 4.3.

1434 of their height, with discrepancies becoming evident at heights above ~ 80 km
 1435 (Fig. 4.28 panels a, b and c). The behaviour of the upper atmosphere within
 1436 the MGCM is less constrained than at lower levels; these discrepancies should
 1437 be noted for any future work involving the MGCM that focuses on high-level
 1438 atmospheric processes, but further discussion of this aspect of the data is beyond
 1439 the scope of this investigation. Figure 4.28 panels d), e) and f) display data in
 1440 which patterns of peak wind speed with height are similar across the changing
 1441 vertical resolutions, although the lower region of Profile A (panel d) does show
 1442 a distinct increase in absolute peak wind speeds as resolution is increased.

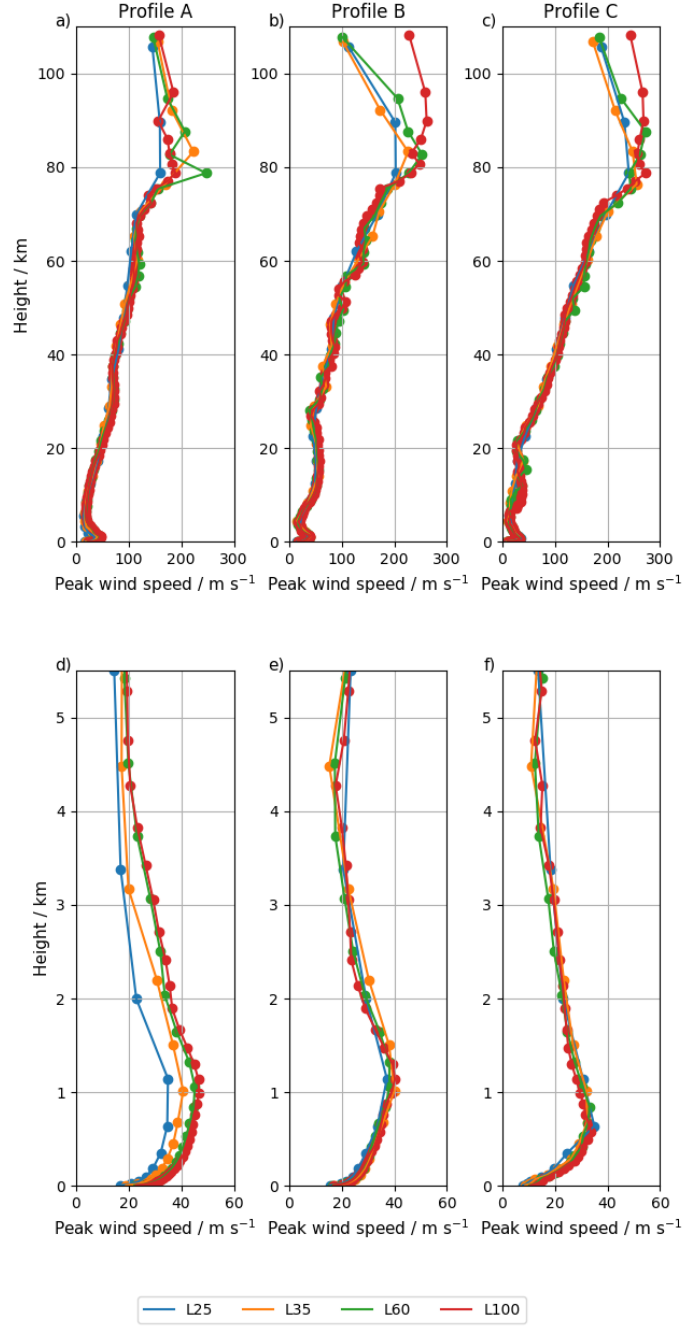


Figure 4.28: Vertical profiles of peak wind speed through the period $L_S = 240\text{--}270^\circ$ at the locations identified in Table 4.3, for four vertical resolution experiments. Full height profiles are shown in panels a), b) and c); the lowest ~ 5 km of the atmosphere are shown in panels d), e) and f).

Figure 4.29 shows the peak wind speed at the base of the identified vertical profiles (i.e. peak wind speed in the lowest model layer at each location), across the vertical resolution experiments. In general, near-surface peak wind speeds are higher at increased vertical resolutions, but there is not a linear correlation between peak wind speed and number of vertical layers. This is displayed clearly in the data relating to Profile A: the change in near-surface peak wind speeds between the L25 and L35 experiments is much larger than the change in near-surface peak wind speeds between the L60 and L100 experiments, despite the larger jump in resolution between the latter. A similar distribution is also seen in the Profile C data shown here. The Profile B data do not show such a distinct pattern (in fact, the highest near-surface peak wind speed at this point is in the L35 data).

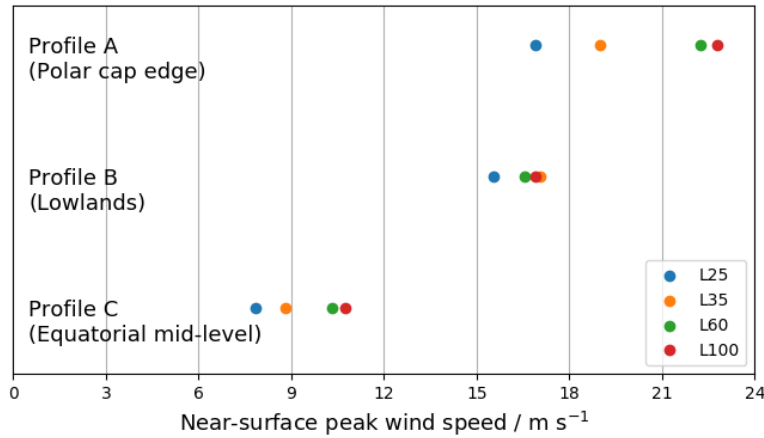


Figure 4.29: Diagram illustrating the near-surface peak wind speed at the base of the analysed vertical profiles, across four vertical resolutions.

Higher resolution simulations tend to produce the more geographically representative dust lifting patterns, as identified in Section 4.4.3, due to these higher near-surface peak wind speeds. The pattern identified in Figure 4.29 suggests that near-surface peak wind speeds will not increase indefinitely with increasing resolution: the rate at which the peak wind speeds increase appears to slow down at higher resolutions. In such a circumstance, increasing the vertical resolution of an experiment will provide a real improvement in the geographical representation of dust lifting only up to a point – after that point, any improve-

ments are likely to be incremental and may not outweigh the increased time required to complete higher resolution simulations.

Considering altitudes above the immediate near-surface, a number of peak wind speed vertical profiles exhibit features at higher resolutions that are not evident in lower resolution experiments. Figure 4.30 shows portions of three peak wind speed vertical profiles, each depicting a different range of altitudes in order to highlight the notable features. Panel a) shows Profile C, as seen in Figure 4.28; b) shows Profile D, taken from the same polar cap edge region as Profile A but through the earlier period of $L_S = 210\text{--}240^\circ$; c) shows Profile E, from the highland region of Syria Planum (-17.5° N , -105° E), also through $L_S = 210\text{--}240^\circ$. For clarity, only data from the lowest and highest resolutions (L25 and L100) are shown here; note that these profiles are not shown against the same vertical scale.

The reader’s attention is drawn to the distinct discrepancies between the L25 data and the L100 data; the descriptions here will concentrate on how the higher resolution data deviate from the results of the ‘standard’ L25 experiment. The deviation in Profile C (Fig. 4.30a) is a ‘bulge’ of higher peak wind speeds between heights of $\sim 6.5 \text{ km}$ and $\sim 15 \text{ km}$. The deviation in Profile D has consistently higher peak wind speeds from the surface up to a height of $\sim 4.5 \text{ km}$, and a distinct ‘hump’ in the speeds at heights between $\sim 0.8 \text{ km}$ and $\sim 1.8 \text{ km}$. The deviation in Profile E is a relatively sharp spike in speeds at heights between $\sim 0.25 \text{ km}$ and $\sim 1.2 \text{ km}$.

It should be noted that such perturbations in peak wind speeds are not apparent in every vertical profile: see Profiles A and B in Figure 4.28, within which the plotted curve of the higher resolution data is much more similar in shape to that of the lowest resolution data.

The precision at which these features can be resolved will impact how – or if – they affect lower altitude and near-surface wind speeds: a surge in wind speed at a height of a kilometre will effect a different change in wind speeds at lower heights when it is resolved across ~ 10 model layers (e.g. an L100 experiment) compared to when it is resolved across ~ 5 model layers (e.g. an L60 experiment). This may begin to explain why a decrease in global dust mass lifting is seen in Figure 4.13 past the point of the L60 experiment.

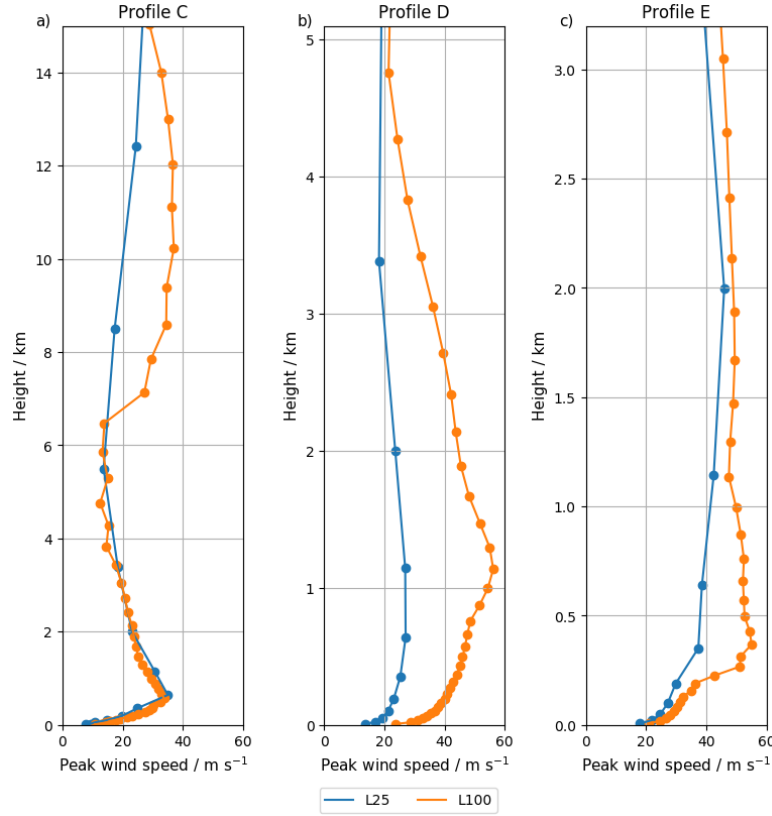


Figure 4.30: Partial-height peak wind speed vertical profiles from experiments completed at low and high vertical resolutions, L25 and L100: a) Profile C, to a height of ~ 15 km above the surface; b) Profile D, to a height of ~ 5 km; c) Profile E, to a height of ~ 4 km.

1496 An example profile supporting this interpretation is shown in Figure 4.31, in
 1497 which Profile E is plotted using results from the L60 experiment as well as the
 1498 L25 and L100 data plotted previously. The change in the perturbation feature
 1499 with increased vertical resolution is evident (panel a), and it is the L60 profile
 1500 that exhibits the highest near-surface peak wind speed (panel b).

1501 It is conceivable that such perturbations in peak wind speeds are an artefact
 1502 of the model. However, a number of facts argue against this interpretation: that
 1503 these features are not present in all profiles; that the same point sampled at
 1504 different times of year shows differences in perturbation (Profiles A and D); and
 1505 that these perturbations vary both in magnitude and in the height at which they
 1506 occur. These perturbations appear to occur across relatively shallow vertical

distances (less than ~ 8 km in depth), meaning that low vertical resolution experiments are not able to resolve such features, leaving their effect on the atmosphere unrepresented.

It should be noted that not all profiles display such a clear trend with increasing resolution as that in Figure 4.31. However, it is reasonable to assert that increasing the vertical resolution of the MGCM provides a better representation of the potentially-complex structure within the Martian atmosphere.

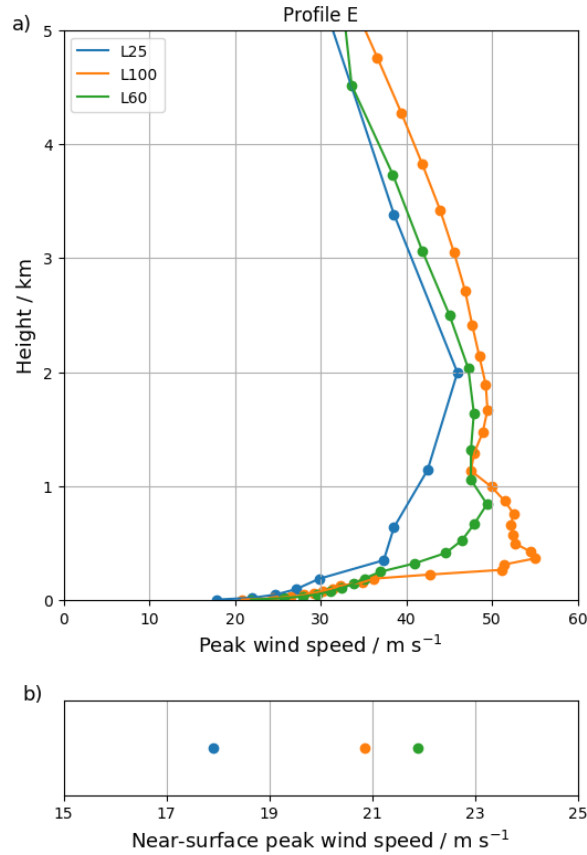


Figure 4.31: a) Partial-height peak wind speed vertical Profile E, showing data from experiments completed at three vertical resolutions: L25, L60 and L100. b) Detail of the near-surface peak wind speeds (i.e. in the lowest layer of the profile) at each resolution.

4.5 Highest Horizontal Resolutions

The highest horizontal resolutions used within this research are those designated T127 and T170 (Table 4.4). In the current build of the MGCM, compilation attempts of very high horizontal resolution models fail when using even standard numbers of vertical layers. Solving this issue would form a substantive core of future study. Compilation of stable models at resolutions of T127 and T170 was possible using 15 vertical layers (L15).

Tests on simulations using such a low number of layers have confirmed that L15 experiments lift a limited amount of dust (in total mass and with regards to the geographical spread of dust lifting), and do not provide a good representation of Martian dust lifting. The experiments discussed in this section cannot be compared directly with any experiments mentioned previously. Nevertheless, these experiments can be compared with each other, and an initial view of the model response at very high resolutions can be gained.

Resolution ID	Approximate physical resolution, ° latitude \times ° longitude	Horizontal gridboxes
T127L15	1.25×1.25	41472
T170L15	0.94×0.94	73728

Table 4.4: The very high horizontal MGCM resolutions used in this research. For experiments at both of these resolutions the lowest layer is at a height of 0.005 km above the surface and the highest layer is at a height of 95.88 km.

T127

In order to compare the full range of horizontal resolutions, a new set of experiments was completed for all lower horizontal resolutions, using only 15 vertical layers. Figure 4.32 shows the amount of dust lifted in each $L_S = 30^\circ$ -long period through the year across these experiments. The anticipated seasonal pattern in lifted mass is still present, and the previously identified trend of increasing dust lifting with increasing resolution is true across these experiments. Figure 4.33 shows the annual, global sum of lifted dust mass against increasing resolution, in which the trend is very similar to that in Figure 4.8.

For completeness, Figure 4.34 shows the global plots of normalised dust lifting through each $L_S = 30^\circ$ -long portion of the Martian year for the experiment

1539 completed at a horizontal resolution of T127.

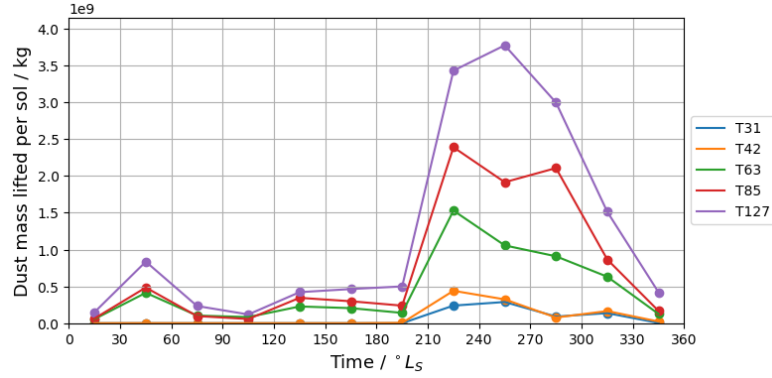


Figure 4.32: The dust mass lifted globally during each $L_S = 30^\circ$ -long period of the Martian year, normalised by the number of sols in each period, for the experiments discussed in Section 4.5. Plot lines added only to help the reader to follow each experimental result.

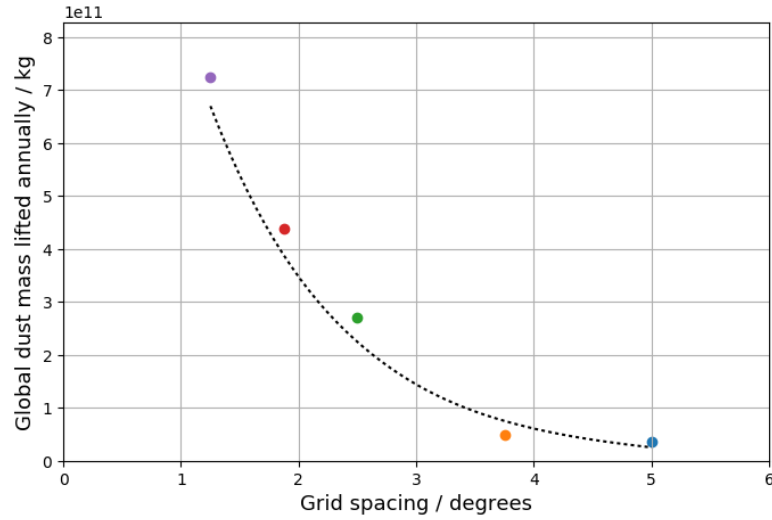


Figure 4.33: Annual, global total lifted dust mass against horizontal physical grid spacing, in experiments completed using 15 vertical layers. Resolution increases from right to left, colours correspond to those used in Figure 4.32. Dotted line indicates trendline of $y = 2 \times 10^{12} e^{-0.875x}$.

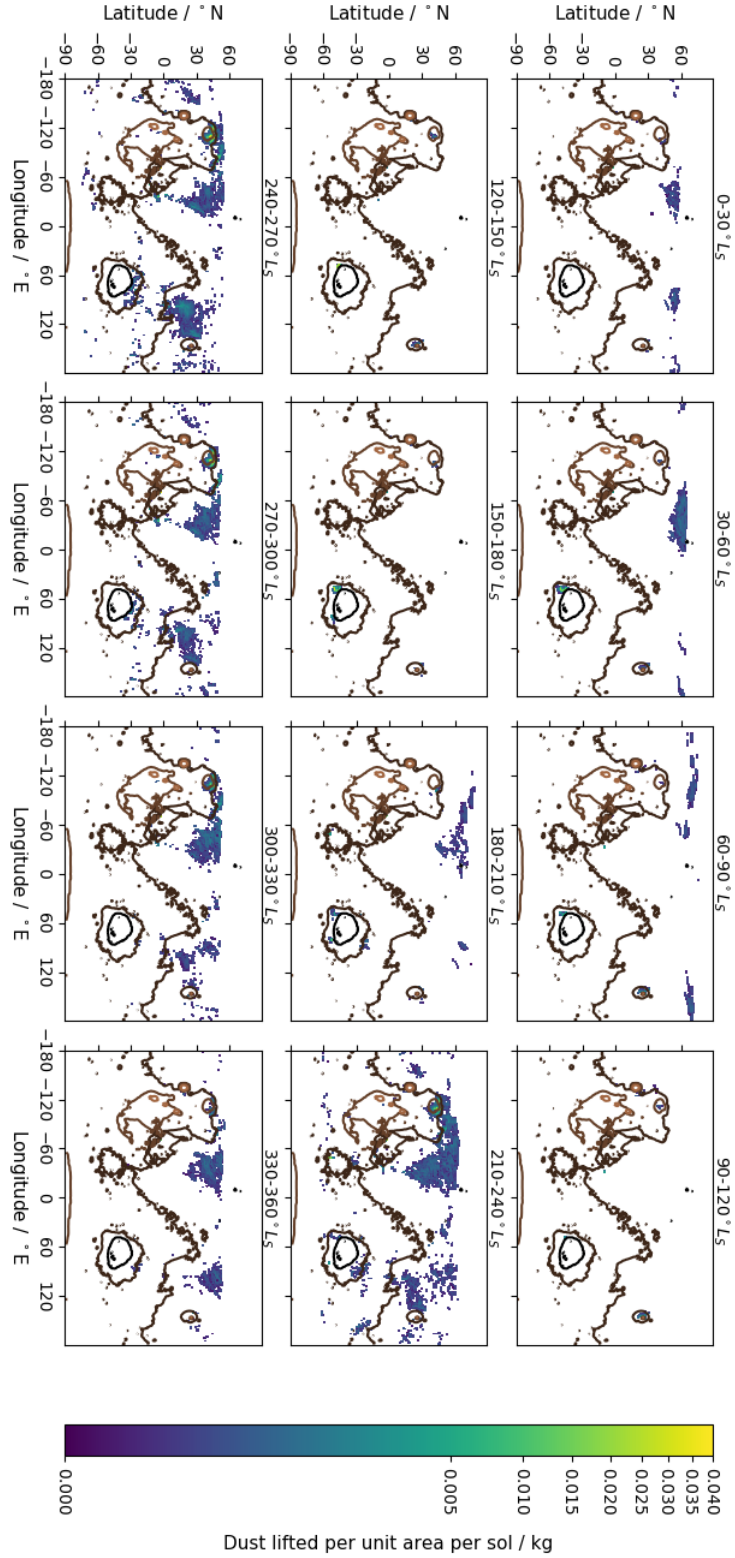


Figure 4.34: Global dust lifting by NSW in a T127L15 experiment. Colour-scheme as for Figure 4.2.

1540 **T170**

1541 The simulation time required to complete experiments with a horizontal res-
 1542 olution of T170 is prohibitive. As mentioned in Section 3.7, interpolation of
 1543 data from lower resolution results allows some of this simulation time to be
 1544 ‘leap-frogged’, but the experiments are still time-consuming. In order to gain
 1545 results in a reasonable time-frame, the experiments discussed in this section
 1546 were only completed using one data output per sol. This output rate is not op-
 1547 timal when considering surface-level processes, as every timeslice of the results
 1548 file contains global data only relating to one single point of time in the sol; it is
 1549 therefore not possible to gain a good temporal representation of the processes
 1550 at the surface-atmosphere boundary, and the results presented here have been
 1551 obtained using a large amount of extrapolation. Experimental data obtained at
 1552 a rate of one output per sol cannot be compared directly with data obtained at
 1553 a higher output rate.

1554 Consequently, for the following comparisons a new set of experiments was
 1555 completed for all horizontal resolutions, using a data output rate of one output
 1556 per sol. The experiments discussed in this section can only be compared with
 1557 each other and cannot be compared directly with any experiments mentioned
 1558 previously. For the T170 resolution only one full $L_S = 30^\circ$ -long period has
 1559 been completed¹. The period $L_S = 30$ - 60° was chosen in an attempt to select
 1560 a section of the year in which the trend of the ‘dust mass lifted with increasing
 1561 resolution’ in the L15 one-output-per-sol experiments was as similar as possible
 1562 to the trend of this quantity in the standard L25 five-outputs-per-sol, to best
 1563 allow possible comparisons between the datasets.

1564 Figure 4.35 shows the dust mass lifted in experiments completed at various
 1565 horizontal resolutions through the period $L_S = 30$ - 60° . The data suggest a
 1566 trend of increasing dust mass lifting with increasing resolution. This trend is
 1567 not unambiguous: more dust was lifted in the T63 experiment than in the
 1568 T85 experiment, making the T63 result a divergence from the potential trend.
 1569 (This divergence is believed by the author to be an artefact of the sub-optimal
 1570 data output rate, although further work would be required to confirm this.)

1571 Figure 4.36 shows the maps of dust lifting through the period $L_S = 30$ - 60° for

¹This experiment took 16 weeks to complete.

the four highest horizontal resolution experiments. The regions of dust lifting are similar in location across the resolutions, with slightly more widespread lifting in regions correlating with topographical features (mountains and the NH seasonal polar cap) at the higher resolutions. However, any improvement gained in the geographical representation of dust lifting regions at these higher horizontal resolutions must be weighed against the prohibitive simulation time required to complete such experiments.

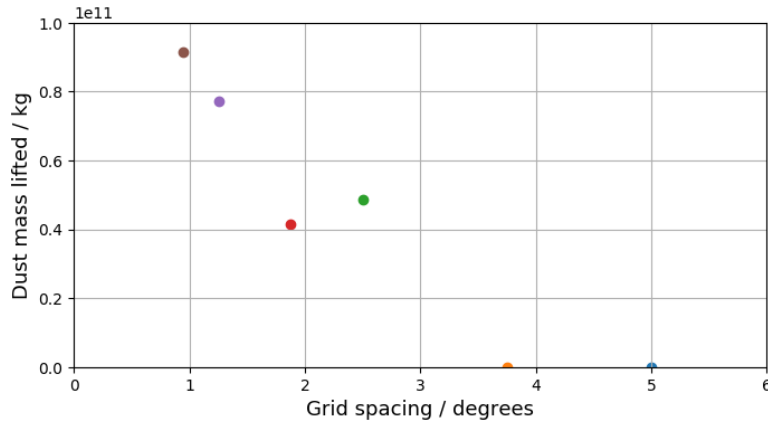


Figure 4.35: Global dust mass lifted during the period $L_S = 30-60^\circ$, across multiple horizontal resolution experiments. Resolution increases from right to left, colours correspond to those used in Figure 4.32: T31 $\sim 5^\circ$, T42 $\sim 3.75^\circ$, T63 $\sim 2.5^\circ$, T85 $\sim 1.875^\circ$, T127 $\sim 1.25^\circ$, T170 $\sim 0.94^\circ$.

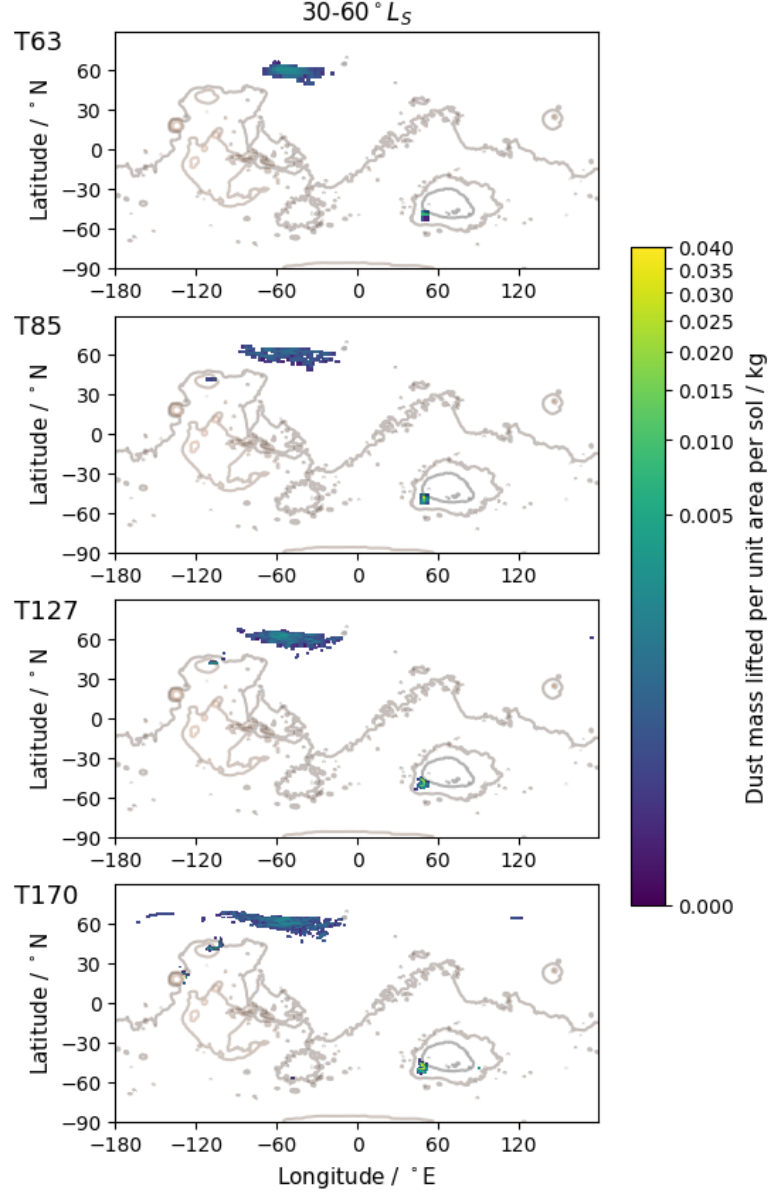


Figure 4.36: Surface dust lifting through the period $L_S = 210-240^\circ$, for the highest horizontal resolution experiments. Colour-scheme as for Figure 4.2.

1579 4.6 Summary and Recommendations

1580 Increasing the resolution of an MGCM experiment, either horizontally or verti-
 1581 cally, results in more geographically widespread lifting of dust by NSWS. Com-
 1582 parisons with observations of storm locations suggest that the geographical pat-
 1583 tern of dust lifting at the lowest horizontal or vertical resolutions is not a good
 1584 representation of surface dust lifting regions on Mars.

1585 Horizontal Resolutions

1586 Higher horizontal resolution experiments give a better representation of geo-
 1587 graphical dust lifting patterns, as well as lifting more dust in total. This is
 1588 the case through both near-aphelion and near-perihelion periods, although the
 1589 seasonal trend of more dust lifting during the SH summer is evident across all
 1590 resolutions. Near-surface peak wind speeds are generally larger in the higher
 1591 resolution experiments, particularly in regions of topographical variation.

1592 Particular areas of improved representation appear to be associated with
 1593 receding edges of seasonal CO₂ polar caps, especially during SH summer ap-
 1594 proaching perihelion, when important storm-forming regions in the NH are rep-
 1595 resented by dust lifting in the higher resolution experiments that is limited or
 1596 absent in the lower resolution experimentals. The higher resolution experiments
 1597 also show dust lifting during this period in regions along the edge of the SH polar
 1598 cap, correlating with further storm observations.

1599 The total amount of dust lifted globally by these experiments increases with
 1600 increasing resolution, but the data obtained so far suggest that this trend is
 1601 asymptotic. This is reflected in the differences between the areas across which
 1602 dust is lifted: the geographical distribution of dust lifting changes most notice-
 1603 ably between lower resolution experiments (T31 to T42) than between higher
 1604 resolutions (T63 to T85). The results from the very highest resolution tests
 1605 (T127 and T170) seem to support these identified trends, but due to the limi-
 1606 tations of those tests, they should only be considered a ‘first pass look’ at very
 1607 high resolution simulations.

1608 **Vertical Resolutions**

1609 Higher vertical resolution experiments give a better representation of geograph-
 1610 ical dust lifting patterns, as well as generally lifting more total dust than lower
 1611 resolution experiments. The areas of improved representation are again gener-
 1612 ally associated with seasonal polar cap edges, although increasing the vertical
 1613 resolution does not give rise to as many ‘new’ dust lifting regions as were seen
 1614 through increasing the horizontal resolution. The change in the total annual
 1615 lifted dust mass with vertical resolution is also not as great as in the horizontal
 1616 case.

1617 Across much of the planet, near-surface peak wind speeds are larger in the
 1618 higher resolution experiments than in the lower resolution experiments. One
 1619 possible cause of this is the vertically-shallow features identified in some – but
 1620 not all – of the analysed peak wind speed vertical profiles: high peak wind
 1621 speeds that are evident in high vertical resolution experiments and absent in
 1622 those at low resolution. These features may be atmospheric perturbations that
 1623 occur across relatively shallow vertical distances, which cannot be resolved at
 1624 the lowest vertical resolutions, and therefore are not represented in those results.

1625 **Recommendations**

1626 Increasing the horizontal resolution of the MGCM provides a better representa-
 1627 tion of underlying topographical features, affecting local wind circulations and
 1628 driving a better geographical representation of surface dust lifting. Increasing
 1629 the vertical resolution of the MGCM also provides a better representation of
 1630 the geographical patterns of surface dust lifting, potentially due to a better
 1631 resolution of the vertical structure of the lower atmosphere.

1632 Based on the findings detailed above, this author recommends that the low
 1633 horizontal and vertical MGCM resolutions typically used for long-term climate
 1634 modelling should no longer be regularly used in experiments exploring the an-
 1635 nual or seasonal change in surface dust lifting by NSW. It is a relatively small
 1636 step further to recommend that they are not used for any experiments that
 1637 are designed to investigate a variety of surface-level processes, or to study the
 1638 impact that any products of such processes have on the wider atmosphere, as it

is likely that these processes (and their production of any tracers, etc.) will not be well represented at these low resolutions.

Specific recommendations on MGCM resolutions must balance any improvement in the representation of dust lifting against the increased time required to complete experiments at higher resolutions. Horizontally, this author recommends that a resolution of at least T63 is used when possible, in order to achieve a reasonable geographical representation of dust lifting. A precise vertical resolution is more difficult to recommend. The representation of the vertical structure of the atmosphere improves with increasing resolution, but a direct relationship between the identified high speed wind features and the higher near-surface wind speeds is as yet unproven. This author therefore recommends a vertical resolution of at least 50 layers is used when possible, in an attempt to achieve a more representative pattern of dust lifting while minimising the increase in simulation time required. It is strongly recommended that any experiments designed specifically to study the behaviour of the Martian atmosphere's Convective Boundary Layer are completed at a high vertical resolution, using at least 100 vertical layers, in order to fully explore this potentially-complex region.

Combining any of these recommended resolutions may result in prohibitively long simulation times. A final recommendation is that careful consideration of the aims of any MGCM experiment is undertaken before high resolution simulations are attempted. It may be possible to use mid-level resolution experiments (e.g. T42L40) for a portion of any investigation, and then to interpolate the results to higher resolutions for a more detailed analysis of specific, shorter time periods.

Section 7.3 identifies a number of potential avenues of further work on this topic.

Chapter 5

Diurnal Variation in Martian Dust Devil Activity

Work from this chapter was published in *Icarus* in January 2017: R. M. Chapman et al., **Diurnal Variation in Martian Dust Devil Activity**. *Icarus* 292 (2017) p154-167, DOI 10.1016/j.icarus.2017.01.003. This chapter expands upon the published content. Sections 5.3 and 5.4 are based upon experiments and analysis completed solely by the author.

5.1 Introduction

Dust devils are small-scale atmospheric vortices that entrain surface dust particles into a vertical, upwardly spiralling column; see Section 2.4 for a full description of this phenomena. They have been observed directly in images of Mars captured both from orbit (e.g. *Thomas and Gierasch*, 1985; *Fisher et al.*, 2005; *Stanzel et al.*, 2006) and from the surface (e.g. *Ferri et al.*, 2003; *Greeley et al.*, 2006), and the tracks they leave behind on the surface have also been imaged from orbit (e.g. *Cantor et al.*, 2006).

Dust is ubiquitous in the Martian atmosphere. Outside the annual dust

storm season, dust devils are considered to be the lifting process that is responsible for the constant atmospheric haze. Understanding their temporal behaviour – on seasonal and shorter scales – is therefore a crucial aspect of understanding the annual, planetary dust cycle.

Due to the lack of direct measurements of most Martian dust devil characteristics (almost anything beyond the population’s size distribution), analogies are often drawn between dust devils on Mars and on Earth. Diurnal variation in activity is one of the characteristics for which such a parallel has been proposed.

Observations of terrestrial dust devils suggest that they are generally most active in the afternoon: *Sinclair* (1969) described dust devil observations that spanned the period between 10:00 to 16:30, with activity reaching a maximum between 13:00 and 14:00 (Arizona, USA); *Snow and McClelland* (1990) observed dust devils starting around 11:00, peaking in number between 12:30 and 13:00, and ending by 16:00 (New Mexico, USA); *Oke et al.* (2007) reported dust devil observations occurring between 11:20 and 17:40, with activity at a peak between 14:00 and 15:40 (New South Wales, Australia); and *Lorenz and Lanagan* (2014) used pressure data to identify dust devil events starting around 09:00, peaking twice during the afternoon, around 14:00 and then 16:00, and lasting until 20:00 (Nevada, USA). This chapter explores the diurnal variation in Martian dust devil activity: the results presented here suggest that the generally accepted description of dust devil behaviour on Mars is incomplete.

Section 5.2 outlines the methods used in this work; Section 5.3 shows the results and Section 5.4 details the comparison of the results with observational data. Section 5.5 contains the discussion and summary of this work.

1708 5.2 Method

1709 The rate at which surface dust is lifted by dust devils (“dust devil lifting”) is
 1710 used herein as a proxy for assessing the level of dust devil activity at any specific
 1711 location and time. Dust devils are too small in scale to be modelled explicitly
 1712 within a global model: dust devil activity levels represent the larger scale effect
 1713 of multiple instances of this small phenomenon within a model gridbox. It is not
 1714 possible to extrapolate any information about the number or size of the dust
 1715 devils represented by any given level of activity. The MGCM parameterisation
 1716 of dust devil lifting is described in Section 3.5.2.

1717 The MGCM allows frequent sampling of atmospheric variations through a
 1718 long period of simulated time. Experiments were completed at a data rate of 12
 1719 outputs per day, spaced evenly throughout the sol. Each data output produces
 1720 a global ‘snapshot’ of the Martian atmosphere at a single time: a rate of 12
 1721 outputs per day allows sampling of any result variable at any specific location
 1722 every two hours.

1723 The rate at which dust devils lift dust can be extracted for each surface
 1724 gridbox, over the whole course of a simulation. In order to investigate temporal
 1725 trends in the lifting rate, the data for each 2-hourly output were averaged across
 1726 30° L_S -long sections of the Martian year. The resulting dataset allows dust devil
 1727 activity rates to be tracked through the sol: the time-of-sol at which dust devils
 1728 were commonly most active within each gridbox, during each portion of the
 1729 year, can be identified.

1730 For clarity, extremely low levels of dust devil lifting were eliminated from
 1731 subsequent calculations. Dust lifting rates of less than $1 \times 10^{-11} \text{ kg m}^{-2} \text{ s}^{-1}$
 1732 are treated as zero lifting; this ‘threshold’ value was chosen by considering dust
 1733 lifting rates at specific sites across the surface, see Section 5.4.

1734 5.3 Peak Dust Devil Lifting Time

1735 Figure 5.1 shows an example global map of the ‘peak dust devil lifting time’: the
 1736 time-of-sol at which dust devils were most active within each gridbox, through-
 1737 out the displayed period. This dataset is from an experiment completed at the

1738 T31 resolution (a physical gridbox size of approximately 5° latitude \times 5° lon-
 1739 gitude, see Section 3.6), utilising a relatively low atmospheric dust loading that
 1740 represents a Martian year similar to MY24 (see Section 3.4.2).

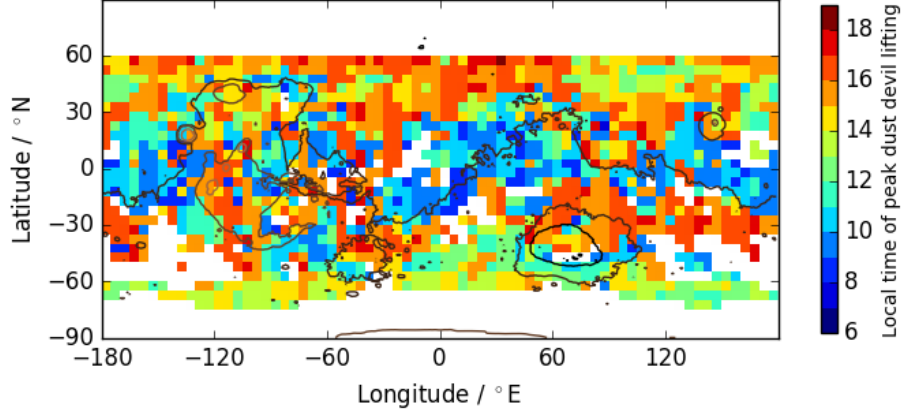


Figure 5.1: Global map in which the colour scale identifies the diurnal timing of peak dust devil lifting. The data displayed here show dust devil lifting averaged across $L_S = 0-30^\circ$, corresponding to early Northern Hemisphere spring. Gridboxes coloured yellow, orange or red denote peaks in dust devil lifting during the afternoon; blue gridboxes denote peaks in dust devil lifting during the morning. White gridboxes indicate no lifting or below threshold lifting. (Topographic contour lines included for illustration only.)

1741 The diurnal pattern within this data is best displayed using histograms of
 1742 the peak dust devil lifting time across all surface gridboxes. Figures 5.2 and
 1743 5.3 show histograms for each 30° L_S section of the year, using the same colour
 1744 scheme as in Figure 5.1.

1745 The histograms depicting the aphelion Martian season spanning $L_S = 330-$
 1746 210° , relating to late winter through to summer in the Northern Hemisphere
 1747 (Fig. 5.2a-f; Fig. 5.3a and Fig. 5.3f), show a clear bimodal distribution of peak
 1748 dust devil lifting times: a large maximum during the afternoon, between 15:00
 1749 and 17:00, and a secondary maximum during the morning, generally between
 1750 09:00 and 11:00. There is a seasonal shift in the diurnal distributions of this
 1751 peak dust devil lifting time: the histograms depicting the perihelion season,
 1752 $L_S = 210-330^\circ$, relating to Southern Hemisphere summer (Fig. 5.3b-e), show a
 1753 unimodal distribution with a single maximum in peak dust devil lifting times
 1754 during the afternoon, between 14:00 and 17:00.

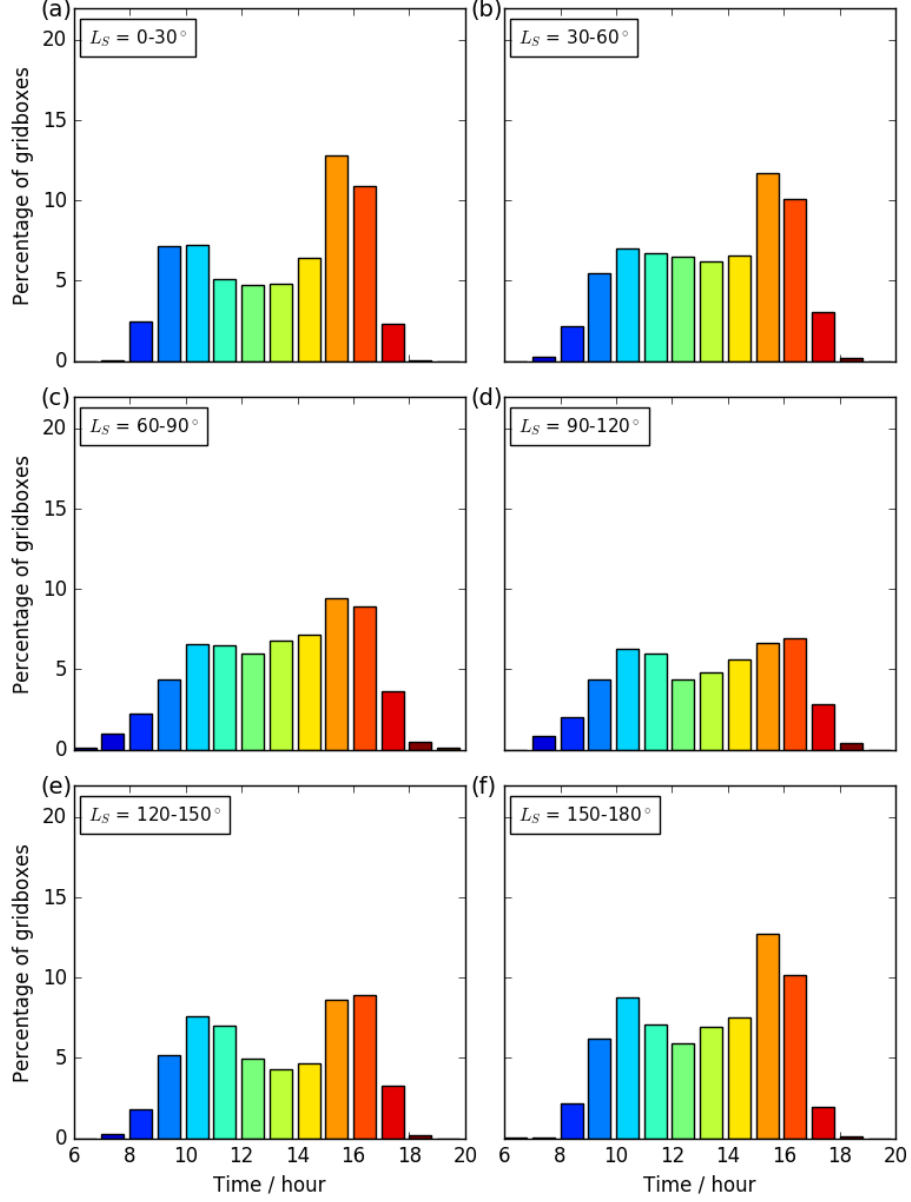
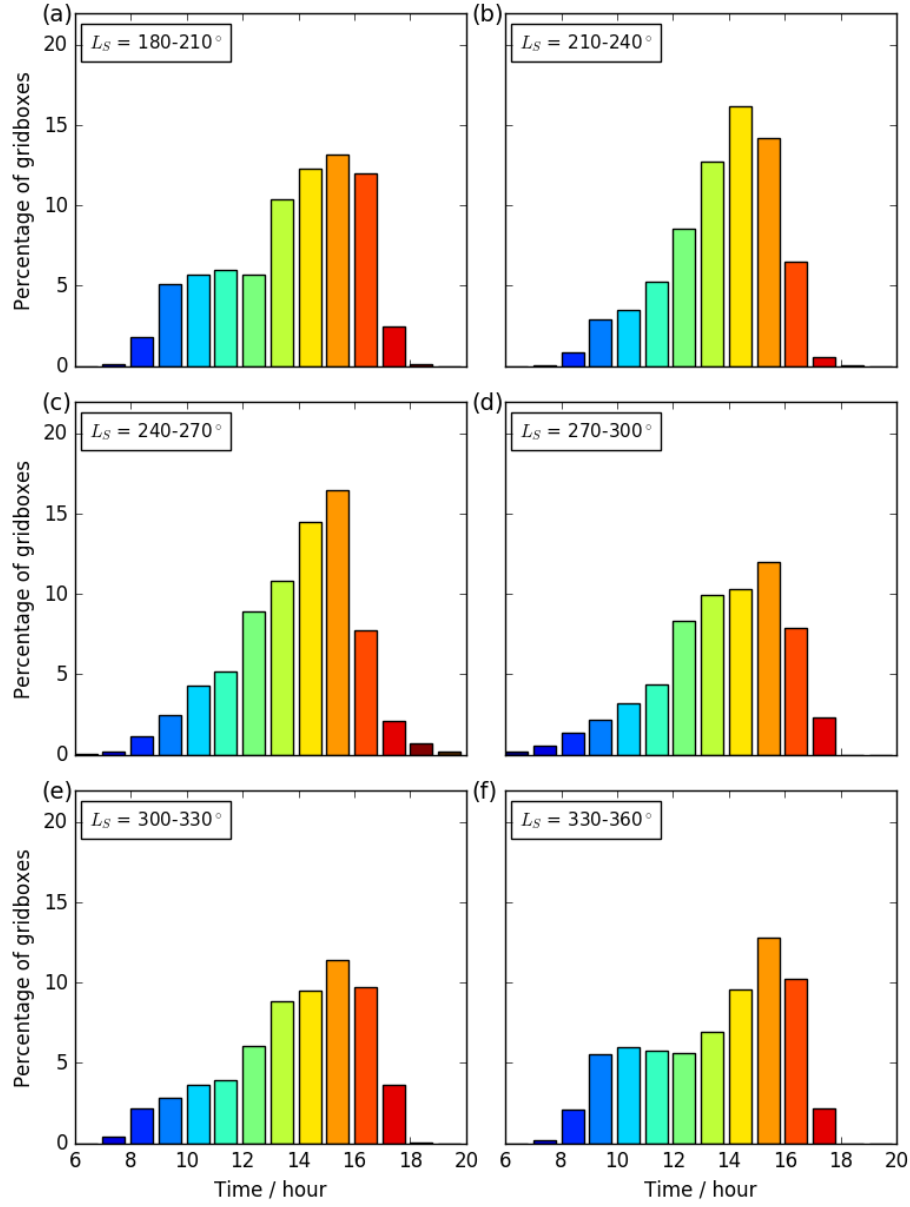


Figure 5.2: Histograms showing the diurnal timing of peak dust devil lifting as a percentage of all surface gridboxes, through $L_S = 0-180^\circ$, split into 30° L_S sections. The colour scheme replicates that of Figure 5.1; the top left panel here shows the same data as in that global plot.

Figure 5.3: As Figure 5.2, for $L_S = 180-360^\circ$.

1755 The experiment that produced the data shown in Figures 5.1 to 5.3 was com-
 1756 pleted utilising an atmospheric dust loading that represented the dust loading
 1757 observed in the Martian atmosphere during MY24, a year that did not experi-
 1758 ence a global dust storm (refer to Section 3.4.2 for more detail). This experiment
 1759 was repeated utilising a relatively high atmospheric dust loading, representing
 1760 a Martian year similar to MY25, in which a global dust storm was observed.
 1761 This higher atmospheric dust loading does not greatly affect the resultant his-
 1762 togrammed data: the bimodal distribution of peak dust devil lifting times is
 1763 still evident through aphelion (Figure 5.4), and the unimodal distribution is
 1764 present through perihelion (Figure 5.5). The seasonal shift between the two
 1765 distributions occurs earlier in the experiment using a higher dust loading, with
 1766 the period $L_S = 180\text{-}210^\circ$ (Fig. 5.5a) now displaying the unimodal rather than
 1767 bimodal distribution. The maxima of the distributions through $L_S = 210\text{-}270^\circ$
 1768 (Fig. 5.5b-c) are shifted slightly earlier in the afternoon than seen in the previ-
 1769 ous experiment, but the timing remains similar. The other panels in this figure
 1770 show little difference to those seen previously.

1771 To test the robustness of these results, the initial experiment was replicated
 1772 at a higher horizontal resolution: the T42 resolution, which corresponds to an
 1773 approximate physical gridbox size of 3.75° latitude \times 3.75° longitude. Again,
 1774 the results are similar to those of the first experiment. Figure 5.6 shows that
 1775 through $L_S = 0\text{-}180^\circ$ a bimodal distribution is still generally present, although
 1776 the data in the section spanning $L_S = 90\text{-}120^\circ$ (Fig. 5.6d) displays a flatter
 1777 distribution at this resolution. Figure 5.7 shows the shift to a unimodal distri-
 1778 bution extending through the majority of the perihelion season, although the
 1779 beginning ($L_S = 180\text{-}210^\circ$) and the end of the period ($L_S = 330\text{-}360^\circ$) still show
 1780 indications of bimodality (Fig. 5.7a and 5.7f; compare with the unimodal shape
 1781 shown in panels Fig. 5.7b-e).

1782 One assumption made so far is that the surface roughness length, z_0 , is
 1783 constant across the whole of Mars: this parameter was set to a ‘standard’ value
 1784 of 1 cm for all the experiments above. To test how this assumption affected these
 1785 results, a further experiment was completed that employed a surface roughness
 1786 map derived from rock abundance data (described in *Hébrard et al. 2012*), across
 1787 which z_0 varies from around 0 to ~ 2 cm.

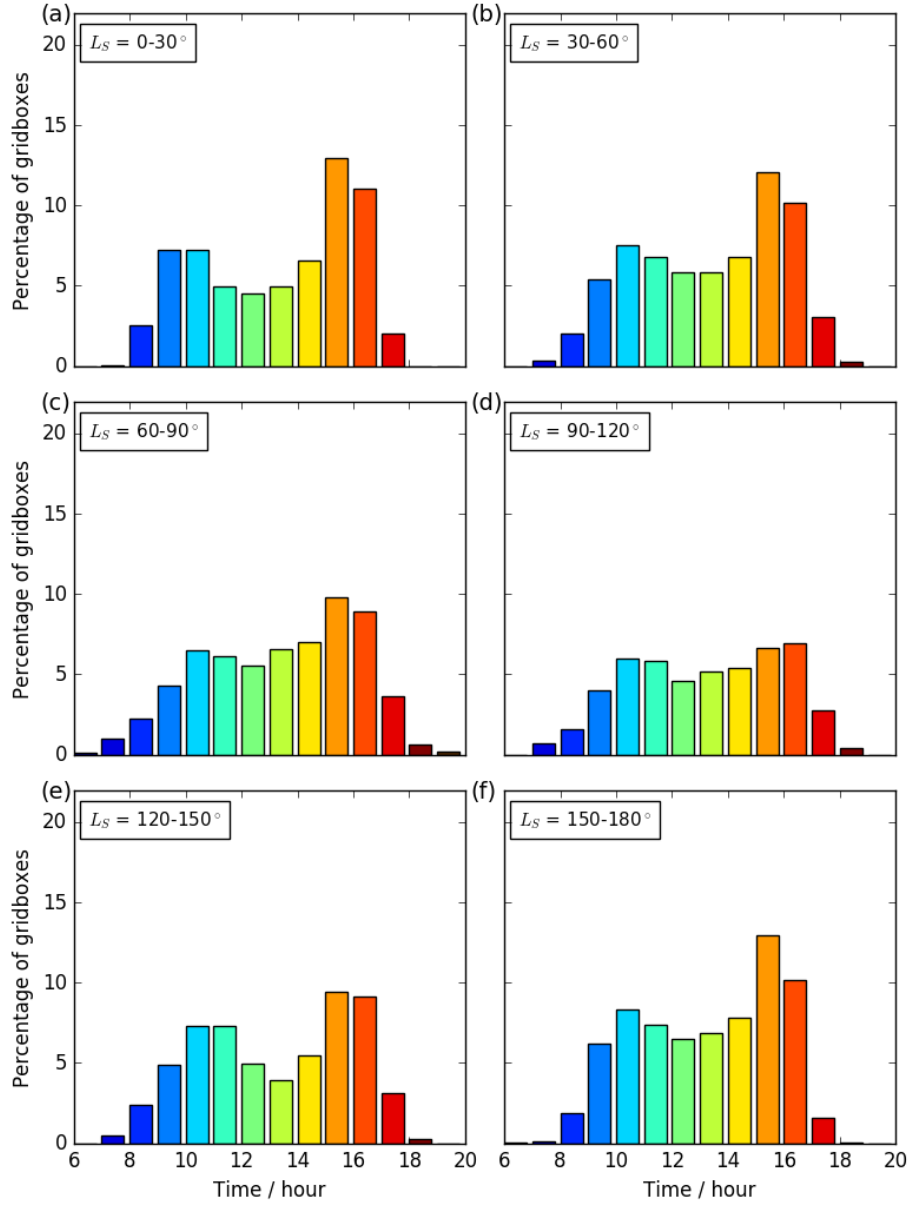


Figure 5.4: As Figure 5.2, displaying histogram data from an experiment utilising a high atmospheric dust loading.

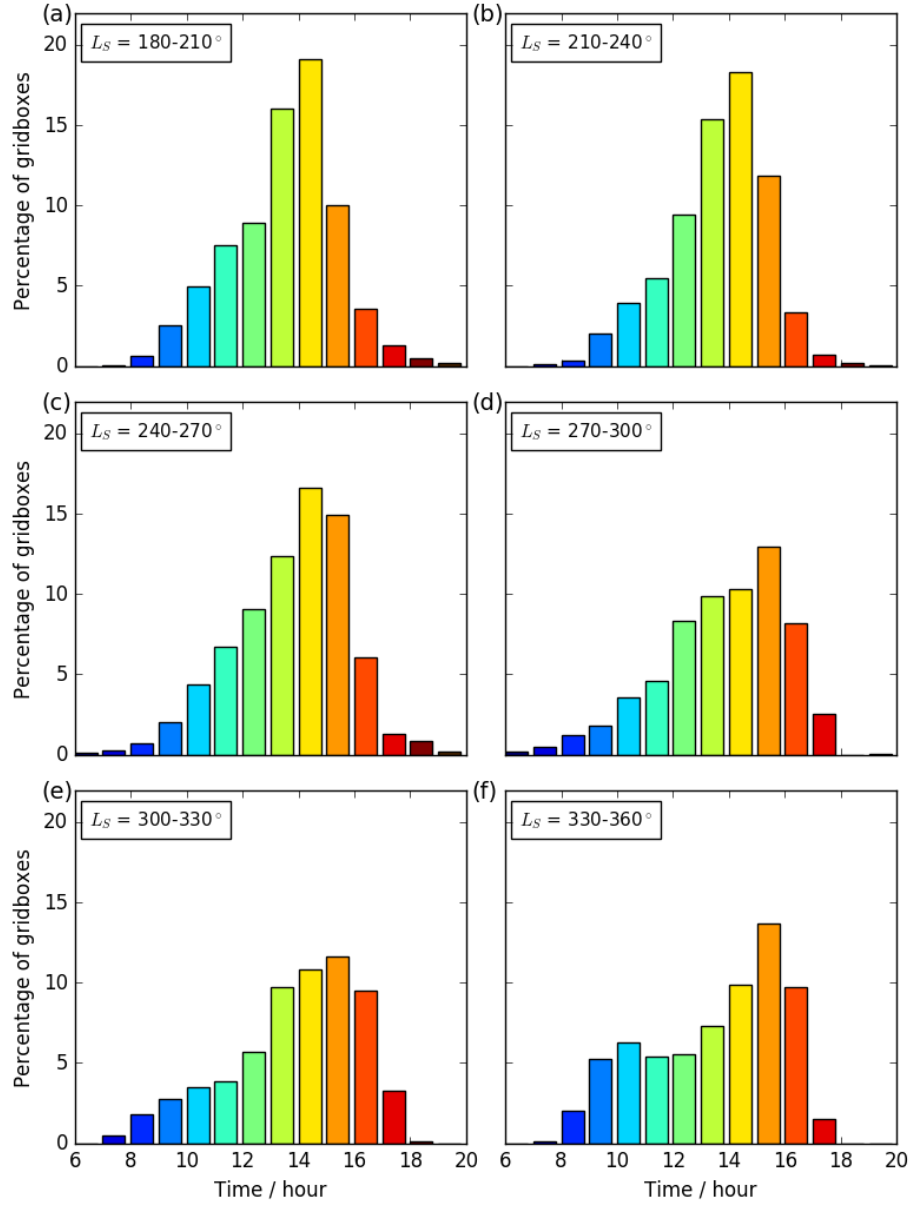


Figure 5.5: As Figure 5.3, displaying histogram data from an experiment utilising a high atmospheric dust loading.

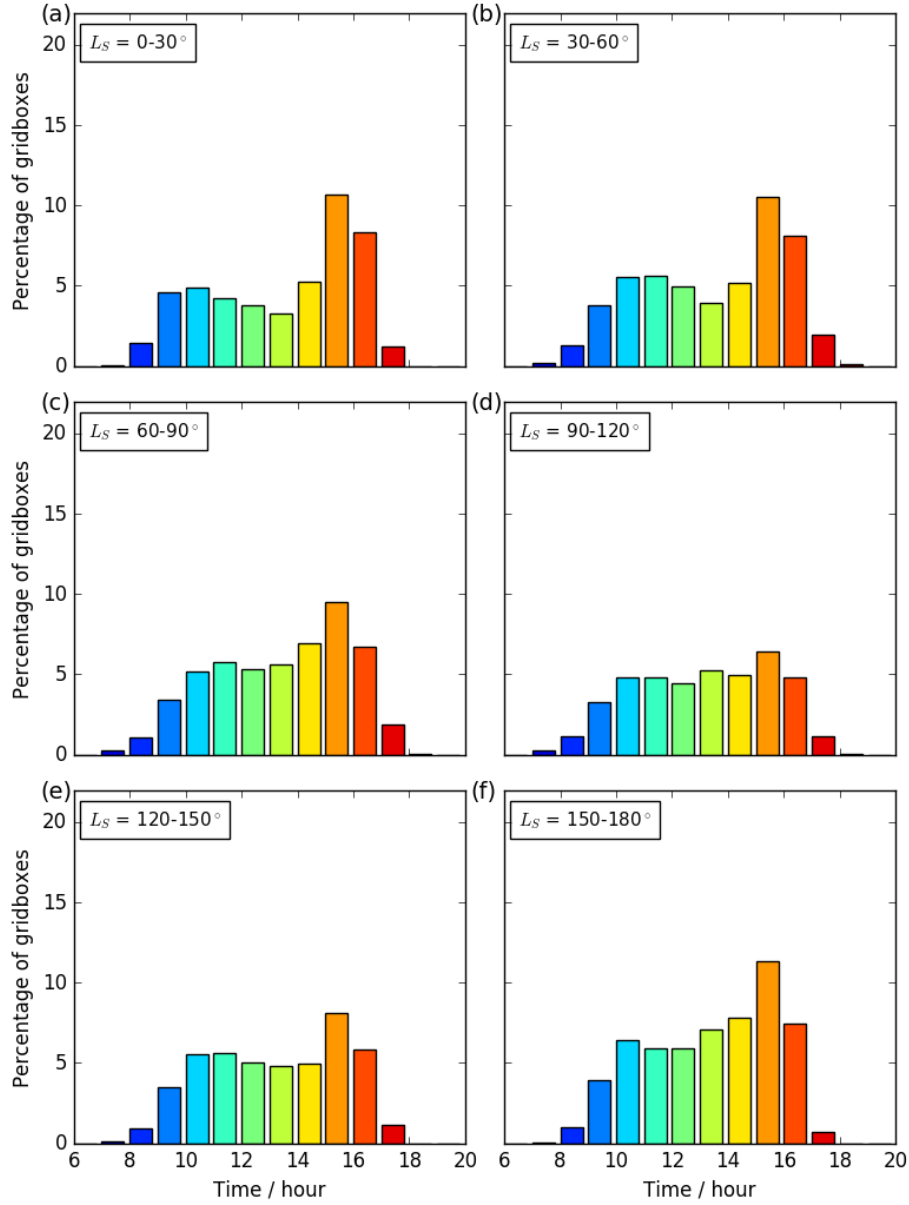


Figure 5.6: As Figure 5.2, displaying histogram data from an experiment completed at the T42 resolution.

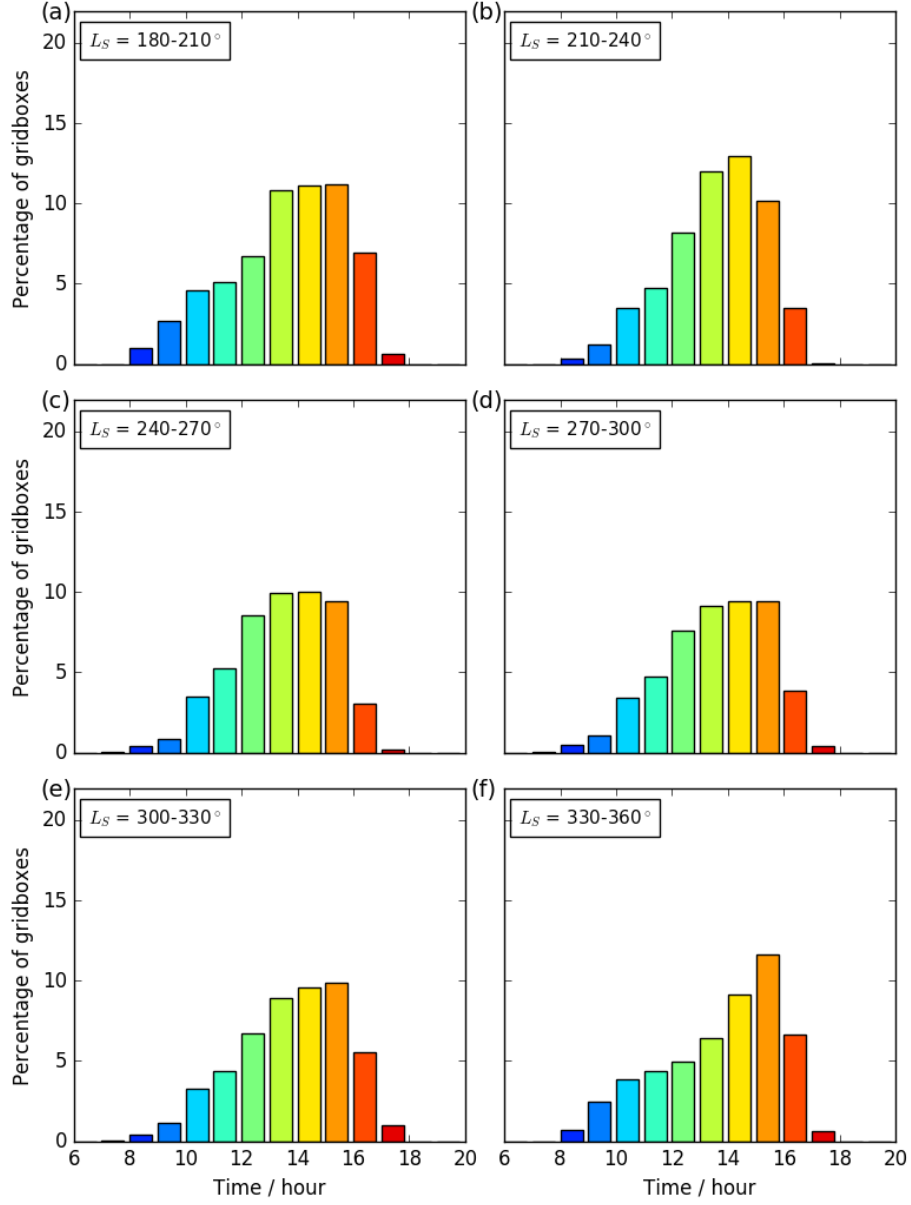


Figure 5.7: As Figure 5.3, displaying histogram data from an experiment completed at the T42 resolution.

1788 Surface roughness is incorporated into the dust devil parameterisation within
 1789 the calculation for surface drag (Equation 3.19): increasing the surface rough-
 1790 ness length increases the surface drag coefficient. This produces higher overall
 1791 levels of dust devil activity, as increased surface friction contributes to the forc-
 1792 ing of warm air into the base of a forming dust devil (*Rennó et al.*, 1998).
 1793 Employing the varying surface roughness map results in more total dust being
 1794 lifted by dust devils through the length of the modelled period, but the timing of
 1795 the dust devil activity (both seasonally and diurnally) was not affected greatly.

1796 The previous bimodal distribution is still evident through the majority of the
 1797 aphelion season: $L_S = 330\text{-}210^\circ$ (i.e. beginning before the Northern Hemisphere
 1798 spring solstice, $L_S = 0^\circ$, and lasting from the start of the year until the Northern
 1799 Hemisphere autumn). There is a flattening of this curve in the data through the
 1800 immediately-post-aphelion period, $L_S = 90\text{-}120^\circ$ (Fig. 5.8d). The bimodality of
 1801 the data on either side of this period ($L_S = 60\text{-}90^\circ$ and $L_S = 120\text{-}150^\circ$, Fig. 5.8c
 1802 and Fig. 5.8e) is also less pronounced than in the experiment using a constant
 1803 $z_0 = 0.01$ m. The unimodality through the perihelion season, $L_S = 210\text{-}330^\circ$
 1804 (Fig. 5.9b-e), is very similar to that seen previously.

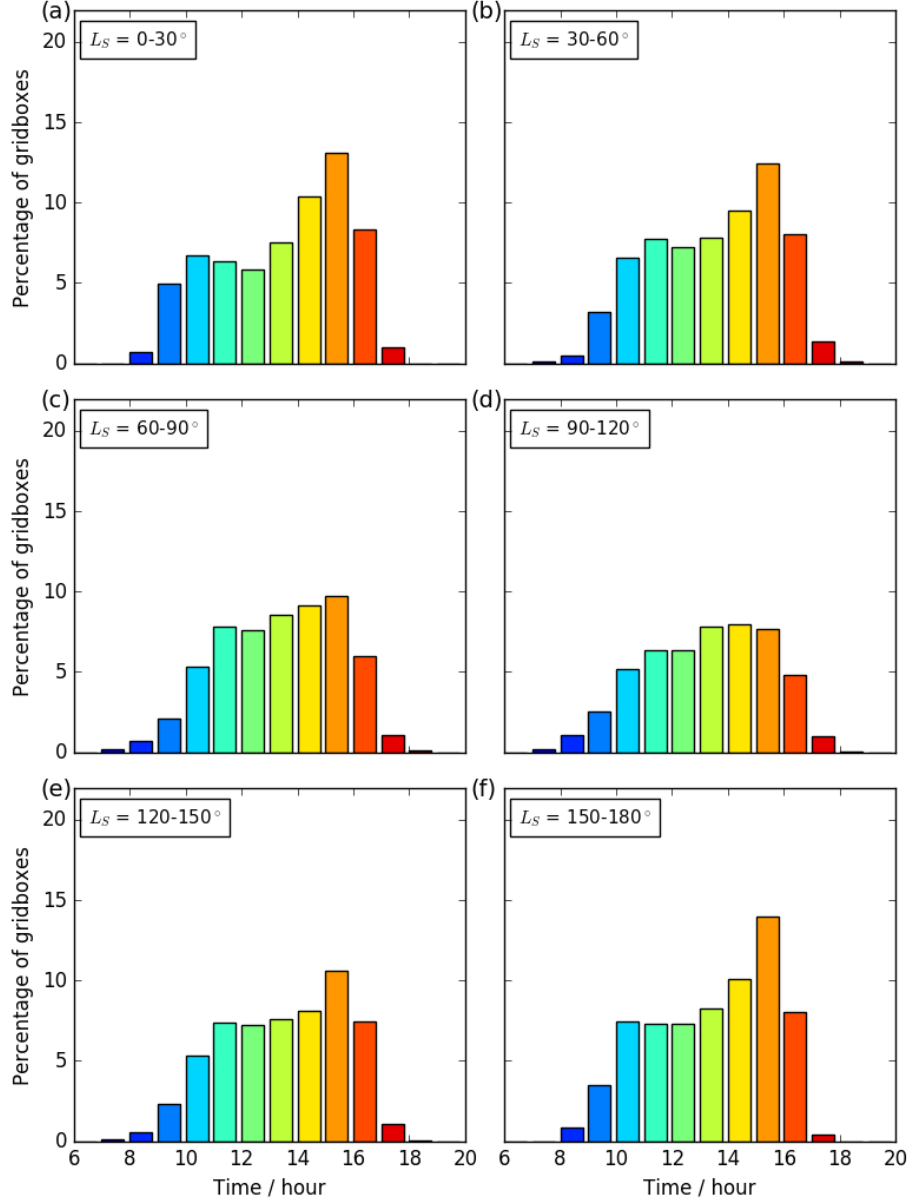


Figure 5.8: As Figure 5.2, displaying histogram data from an experiment completed using a map of varying surface roughness rather than assuming that z_0 is a constant value.

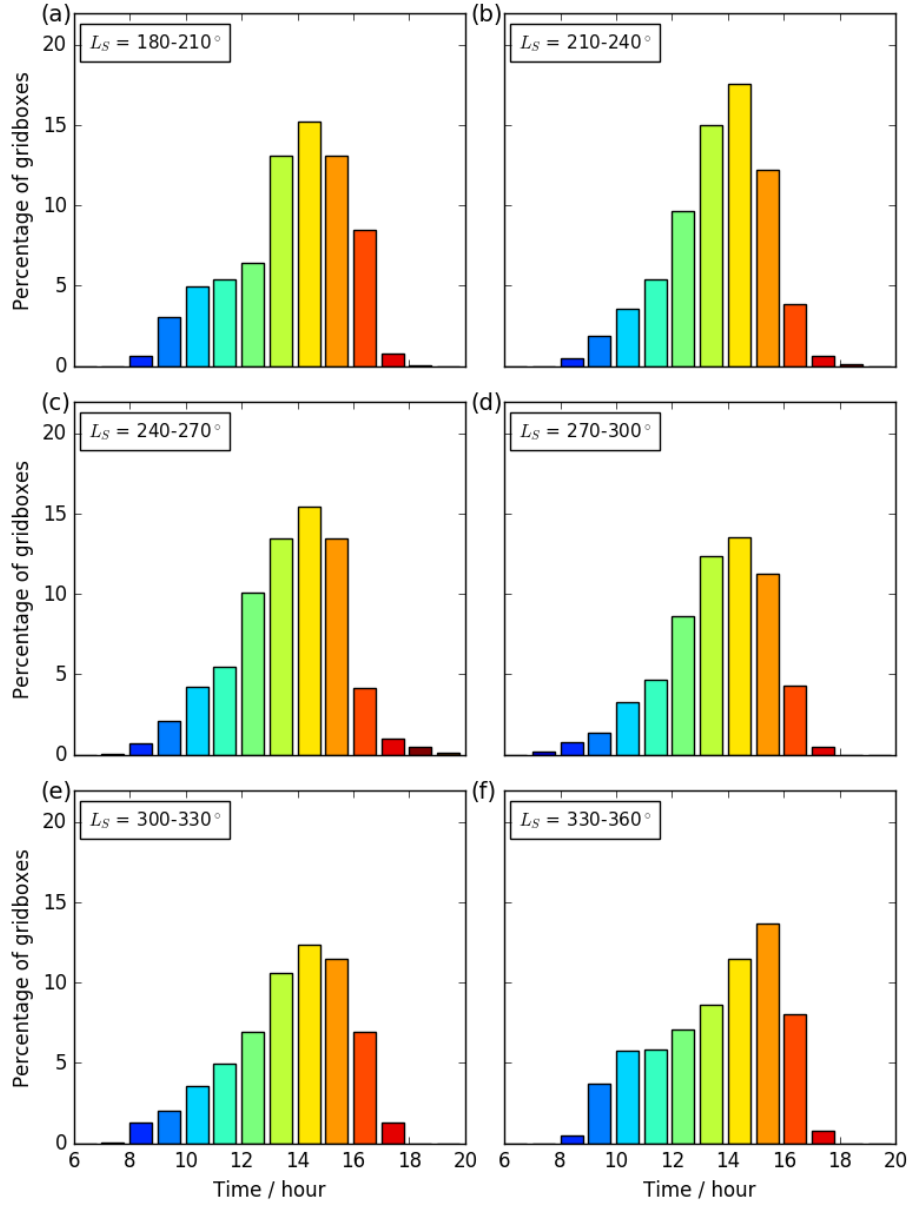


Figure 5.9: As Figure 5.3, displaying histogram data from an experiment completed using a map of varying surface roughness.

5.3.1 Variability of Individual Gridboxes

While Figure 5.1 shows the global view of diurnal peaks in dust devil lifting, there can be considerable variation in the timings displayed for any one gridbox. Figure 5.10 illustrates that some individual gridboxes display dust devil lifting only in the morning, some display lifting only in the afternoon, and others display lifting distributed more widely throughout the sol, even showing a bimodal lifting pattern within a single gridbox.

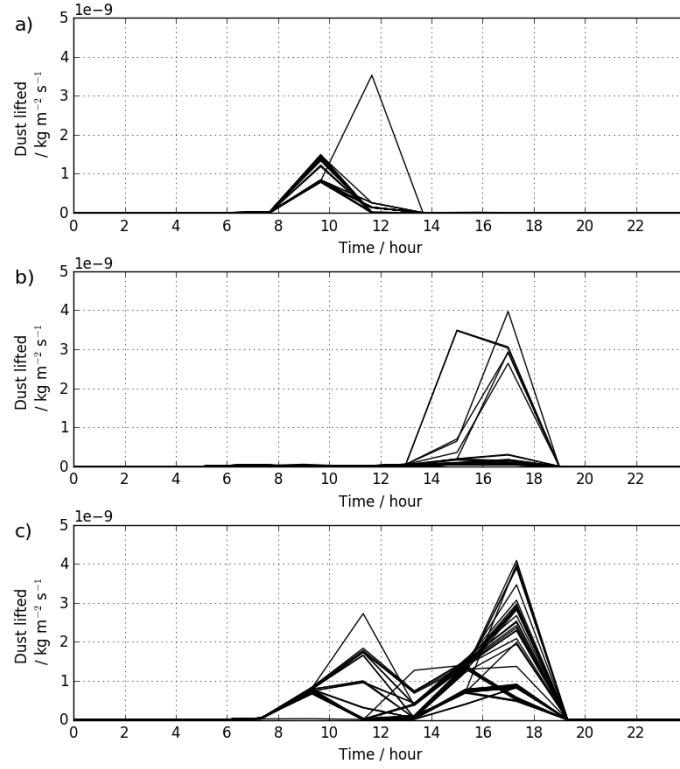


Figure 5.10: Dust devil lifting within individual gridboxes through $L_S = 120$ - 150° (time of year chosen as an example period). Each plotted line corresponds to the dust devil lifting through one sol, with the period covering 60 sols in total. The plots show varying diurnal timings of dust devil lifting: a) morning-only dust devil lifting (gridbox centred on -12.5° N , 175° E), b) afternoon-only dust devil lifting (37.5° N , 75° E), and c) through-sol dust devil lifting, displaying a nominal bimodal distribution (27.5° N , -10° E).

5.3.2 Variability Resulting from the Parameterisation

The origin of the identified temporal variability in modelled peak dust devil lifting can be found by examining the component variables within Equations 3.16 and 3.18, reproduced here for convenience as one equation:

$$F_{\text{devil}} = \alpha_D \eta \rho c_p C_D U (T_{\text{surf}} - T_{\text{atm}}) \quad (5.1)$$

These experiments held constant the values used for the dust devil lifting efficiency α_D , the specific heat capacity at constant pressure c_p , and the surface drag coefficient C_D (apart from the single surface roughness test mentioned above), so these variables cannot cause the diurnal variation displayed in the dust devil lifting. The variables that show a consistent diurnal variation are the thermodynamic efficiency, η , the near-surface atmospheric density, ρ , and the surface-to-atmosphere temperature gradient, $(T_{\text{surf}} - T_{\text{atm}})$.

Thermodynamic Efficiency

The variation of the thermodynamic efficiency, η , follows the diurnal variation of the depth of the Convective Boundary Layer (CBL). The depth of the CBL, represented by $p_{\text{surf}} - p_{\text{top}}$ in the calculation of dust devil thermodynamic efficiency (Equation 3.17), is directly forced by insolation-driven heating of both the surface and the near-surface atmosphere (*Spiga et al.*, 2010), and the consequent increase in heat in the lower portion of the atmosphere. Temporal variation of the depth of the CBL therefore follows the diurnal pattern of heating in the lowest levels of the atmosphere: CBL depth increases steadily during the morning, reaches a peak in the late afternoon, and decreases in the evening (at a faster rate than the morning increase). This is illustrated in Figure 5.11, which shows example η curves calculated for the gridbox centred on -2.5° N, -5° E (covering the region of the landing site of NASA’s Opportunity rover in Meridiani Planum) at $L_S \approx 245^\circ$, in a year experiencing a low atmospheric dust loading (MY24).

While the local depth of the CBL varies considerably over the planet depending on local surface elevation (*Hinson et al.*, 2008), the diurnal pattern of CBL depth variation is consistent across the planet due to its dependence on

insolation. The value of η will therefore consistently reach a maximum in the late afternoon; its local value will be determined by the local depth of the CBL: a CBL depth of ~ 5 km results in $\eta \sim 0.06$ and a CBL depth of ~ 8 km results in $\eta \sim 0.08$. (From Equation 5.1 it can be seen that η must be greater than zero for any dust devil lifting to occur.)

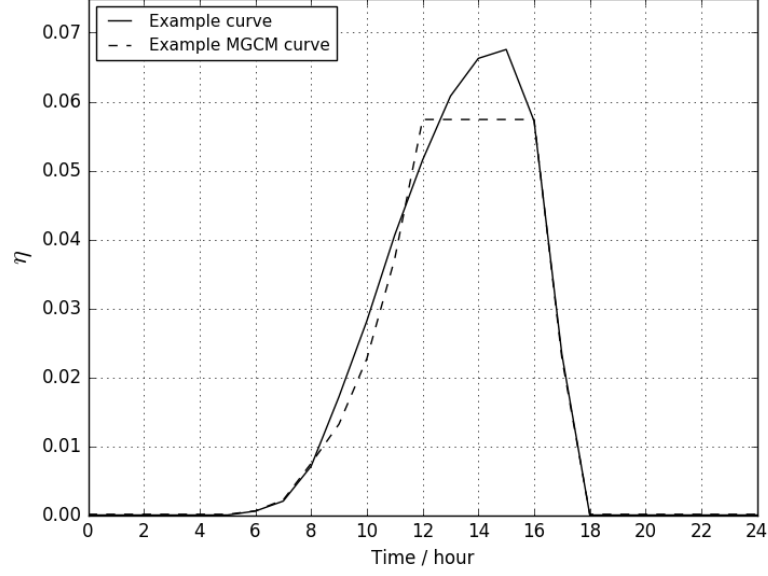


Figure 5.11: The example η curve (solid line) was calculated using a representative diurnal CBL depth curve extracted from the Mars Climate Database (*Lewis et al.*, 1999). The example MGCM η curve (dashed line) illustrates how the calculation of η within the model is affected by the discretisation of atmospheric layers. This truncation/quantisation effect is due to the depth of the model's vertical layers, which are shallow close to the surface (i.e. tens of metres deep in the lowest layers) but increase in depth as altitude increases (e.g. ~ 2000 m deep at an altitude of 5 km). In both curves η increases during the morning, reaches a maximum shortly after peak insolation, and then decays more quickly in the evening.

Near-surface Atmospheric Density

Near-surface atmospheric density, ρ , varies widely by location, driven by local variations in the near-surface atmospheric pressure. Despite this difference in absolute value, the diurnal variation of this quantity is broadly consistent across the planet's surface. Figure 5.12 illustrates this with ρ curves from surface locations at extremes of altitude.

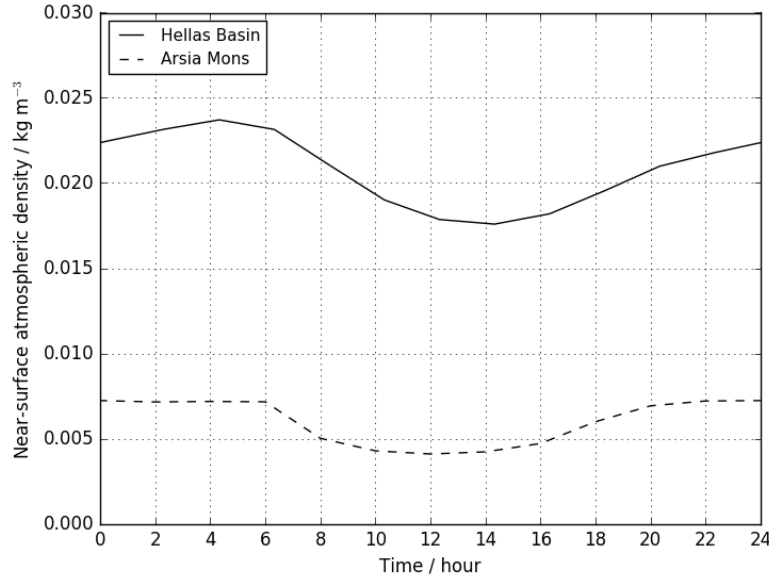


Figure 5.12: Near-surface atmospheric density at two locations: within Hellas basin (at an altitude ~ 6.7 km below Mars datum) and in the vicinity of Arsia Mons (at an altitude ~ 15.5 km above Mars datum). These values were averaged over the period $L_S = 240\text{--}270^\circ$. The shape of the diurnal curve is similar for both sites through the length of a sol.

Near-surface Temperature Gradient

The temperature gradient between the surface and the near-surface atmosphere, $(T_{\text{surf}} - T_{\text{atm}})$, has a predictable diurnal cycle, with a magnitude dependent on latitude and time of year. Surface temperature reaches a peak at the point of maximum insolation, around 13:00 local time, while near-surface atmospheric temperature peaks later in the sol, between 16:00 and 17:00. This lag between the temperature curves produces a maximum in $(T_{\text{surf}} - T_{\text{atm}})$ that occurs slightly ahead of the peak in surface temperature (illustrated in Figure 5.13).

Although surface and near-surface temperatures vary by a large amount across latitudes and altitudes, the timings of the peaks in the temperature curves remain relatively consistent. The difference ($T_{\text{surf}} - T_{\text{atm}}$) must be greater than zero for any dust devil lifting to occur, see Equation 5.1.

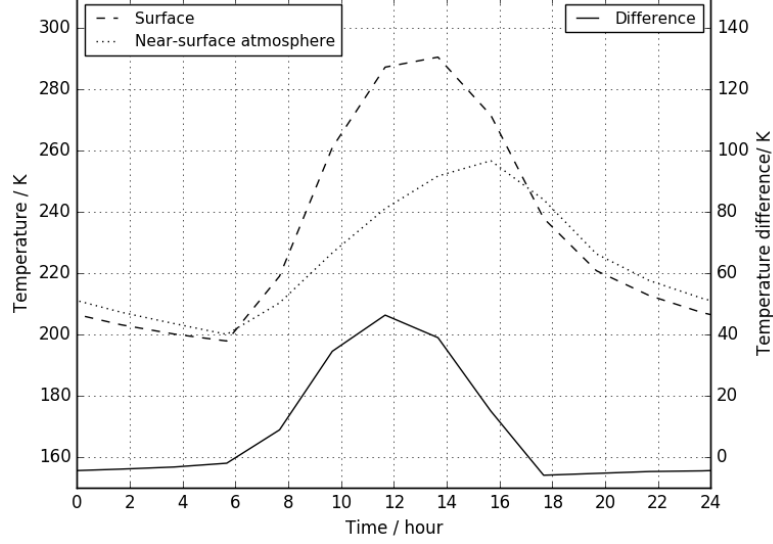


Figure 5.13: Surface temperature and near-surface atmospheric temperature curves are plotted against the left axis and temperature difference ($T_{\text{surf}} - T_{\text{atm}}$) is plotted against the right axis. Values were averaged over $L_S=240-270^\circ$; this gridbox is centred on -2.5° N , -5° E . The peak in temperature difference occurs around 12:00, leading the timing of the peak in surface temperature.

Near-surface Wind Speed

The final component in Equation 5.1 is the near-surface wind speed, U . This is calculated from the large-scale winds within the lowest model layer of the atmosphere (held at a height of ~ 5 m above the surface), and can be highly variable throughout the course of one sol. Figure 5.14 shows an example of the variability present in near-surface wind speed within a selected gridbox. The associated dust devil lifting is also shown: in this particular gridbox the timing of the dust devil lifting is distributed broadly throughout daylight hours. (Figure 5.15 shows the near-surface wind speeds associated with the examples of morning-only and afternoon-only dust devil lifting plotted in Figure 5.10.)

Figures 5.16 and 5.17 show histograms of the diurnal timing of peak near-

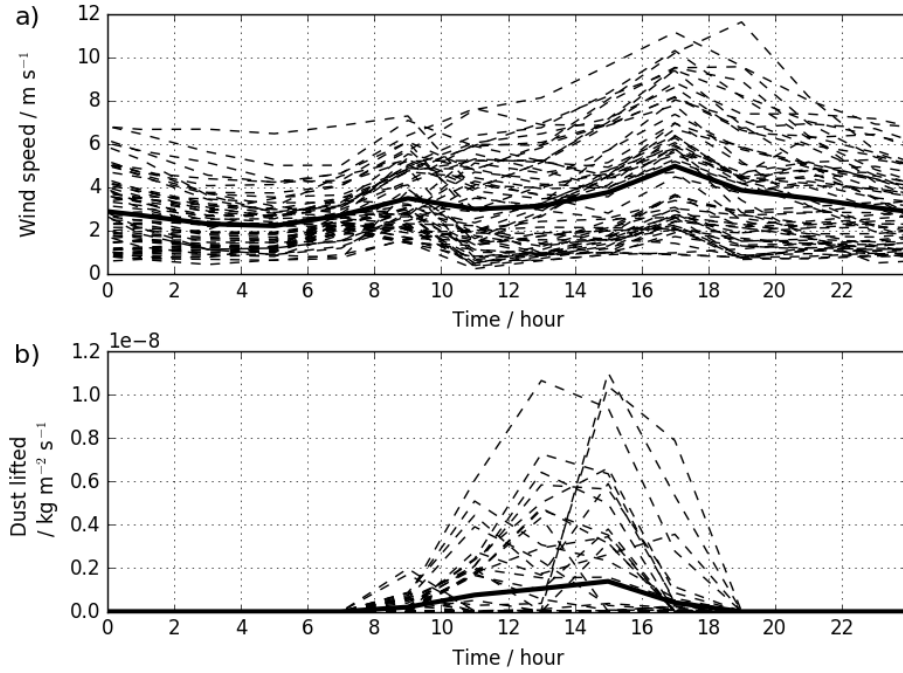


Figure 5.14: Near-surface wind speeds and dust devil lifting within an individual gridbox (47.5° N, 135° E) through the period $L_S = 0-30^\circ$. Each dashed line corresponds to values through one sol (60 sols in total), and the heavy solid line shows the average of this period. These panels show the variability of the plotted values: a) wide variation in the amplitude of wind speeds, b) variation in the timing and amplitude of dust devil lifting.

1875 surface wind speeds through the course of a year. A bimodal distribution of
 1876 timings is evident during the period of Northern Hemisphere spring and summer,
 1877 and a unimodal distribution is evident through Northern Hemisphere autumn
 1878 and winter. This pattern closely matches the distributions identified in the
 1879 diurnal timings of peak dust devil lifting (compare with Figures 5.2 and 5.3),
 1880 including the seasonal shift between distributions.

1881 The near-surface wind speed is the only component in Equation 5.1 that does
 1882 not follow a regular pattern through each sol: the diurnal variations in η , ρ , and
 1883 $(T_{\text{surf}} - T_{\text{atm}})$ follow smooth, predictable curves, while the variation in wind
 1884 speed from sol to sol is more stochastic in nature. It is therefore reasonable to
 1885 conclude that, while insolation is the root driver of Martian dust devil formation,
 1886 the identified variability in the timing of modelled dust devil lifting depends
 1887 primarily on the speed of the near-surface wind.

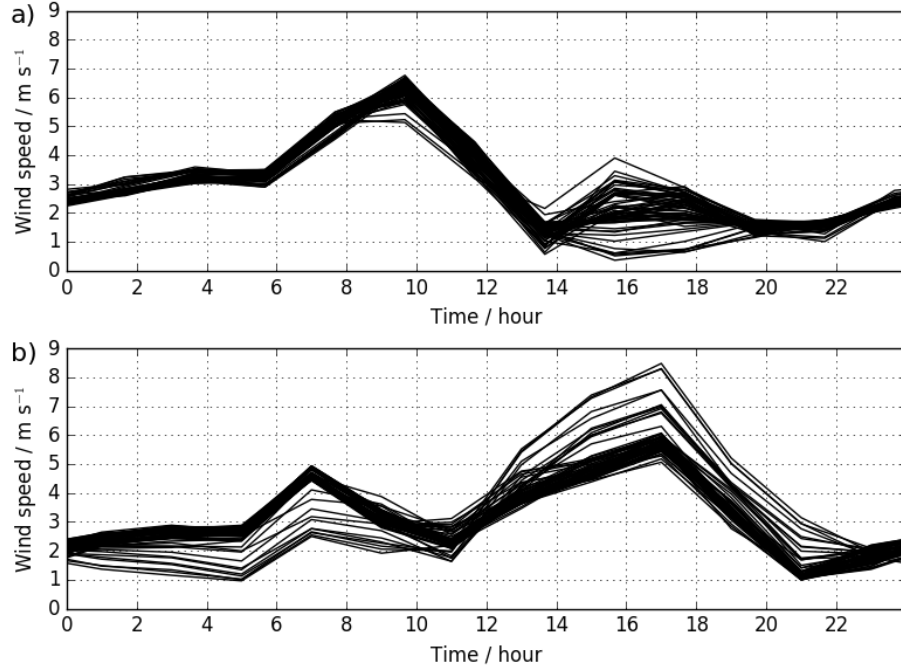


Figure 5.15: Near-surface wind speeds within individual gridboxes through the period $L_S = 120-150^\circ$. Each plotted line corresponds to the varying wind speed through one sol (60 sols in total). a) gridbox centred on -12.5° N, 175° E, b) gridbox centred on 37.5° N, 75° E. Compare with panels a) and b) in Figure 5.10.

As described by this dust devil parameterisation scheme: the period of the sol during which there is a positive value of sensible heat at the planet's surface provides an envelope of time during which dust devils *can* form, but precisely *when* dust devils form within that timing envelope is governed by the instantaneous near-surface wind speed. Figure 5.18 shows how the wind speed and temperature difference terms of the parameterisation can vary globally, and highlights examples of the correlation between these terms and the resultant level of dust devil lifting.

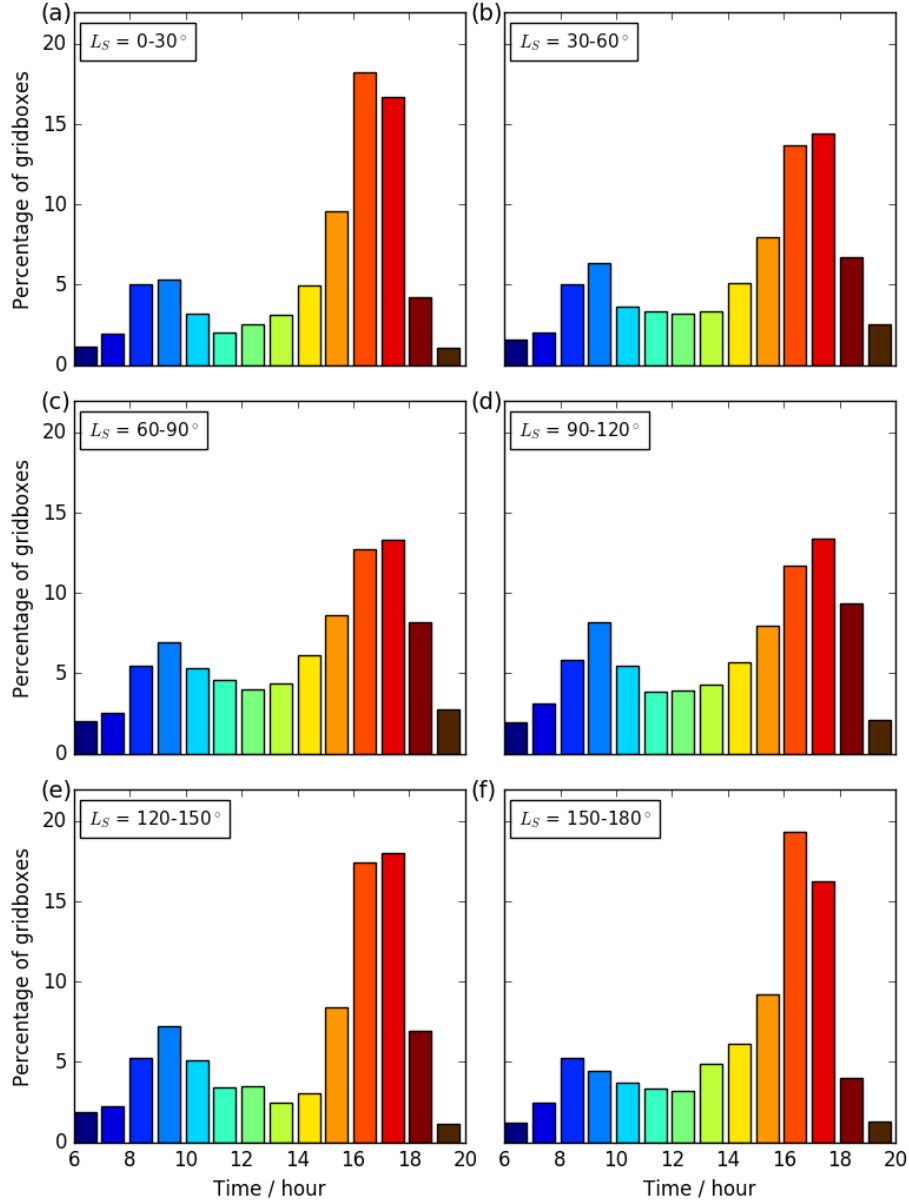


Figure 5.16: Histograms showing the diurnal timing of peak near-surface wind speeds as a percentage of all surface gridboxes, through $L_S = 0-180^\circ$, split into 30° L_S sections. The colour scheme replicates the one used in Figure 5.1. A clear bimodal distribution in timings is evident in all panels.

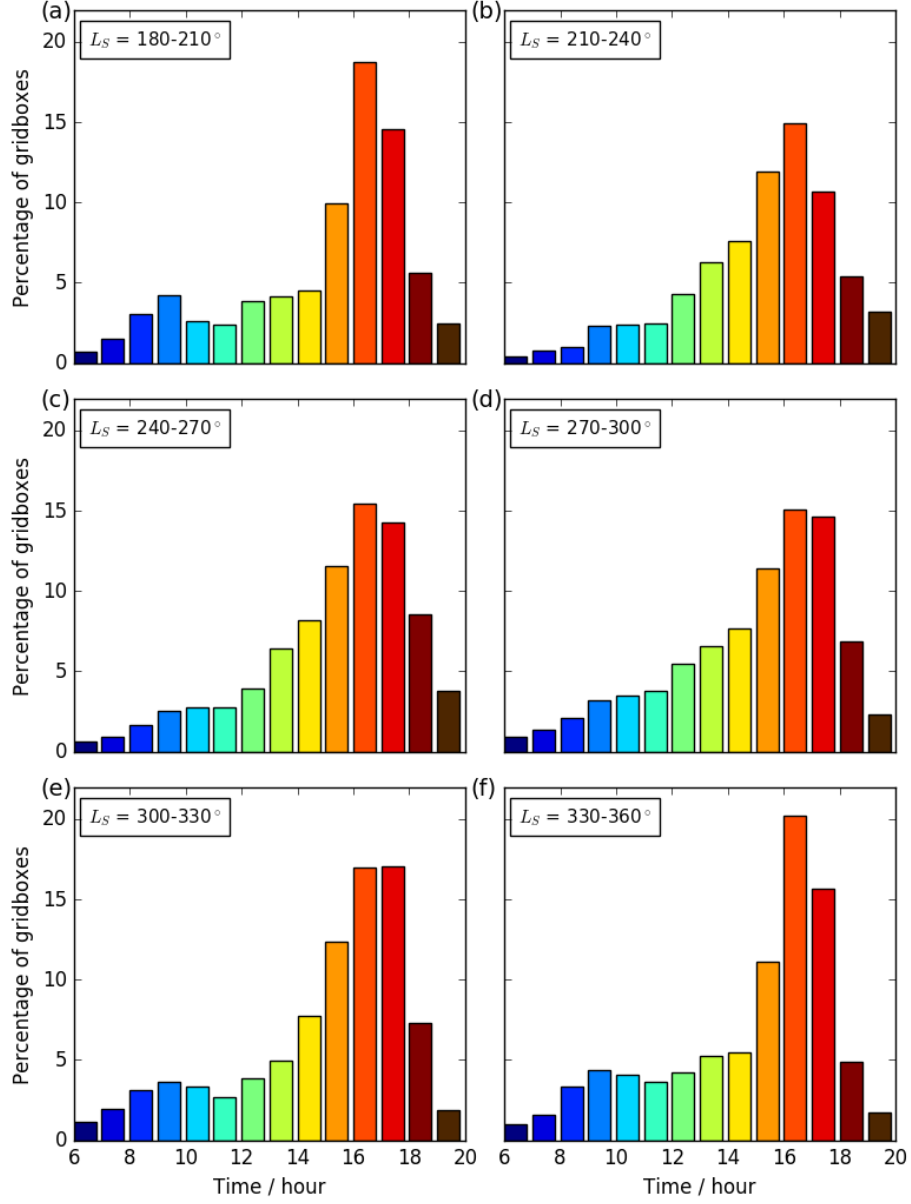


Figure 5.17: As Figure 5.16, for $L_S = 180-360^\circ$. The periods spanning $L_S = 210-300^\circ$ tend towards a unimodal distribution, while a bimodal distribution is apparent in the other panels.

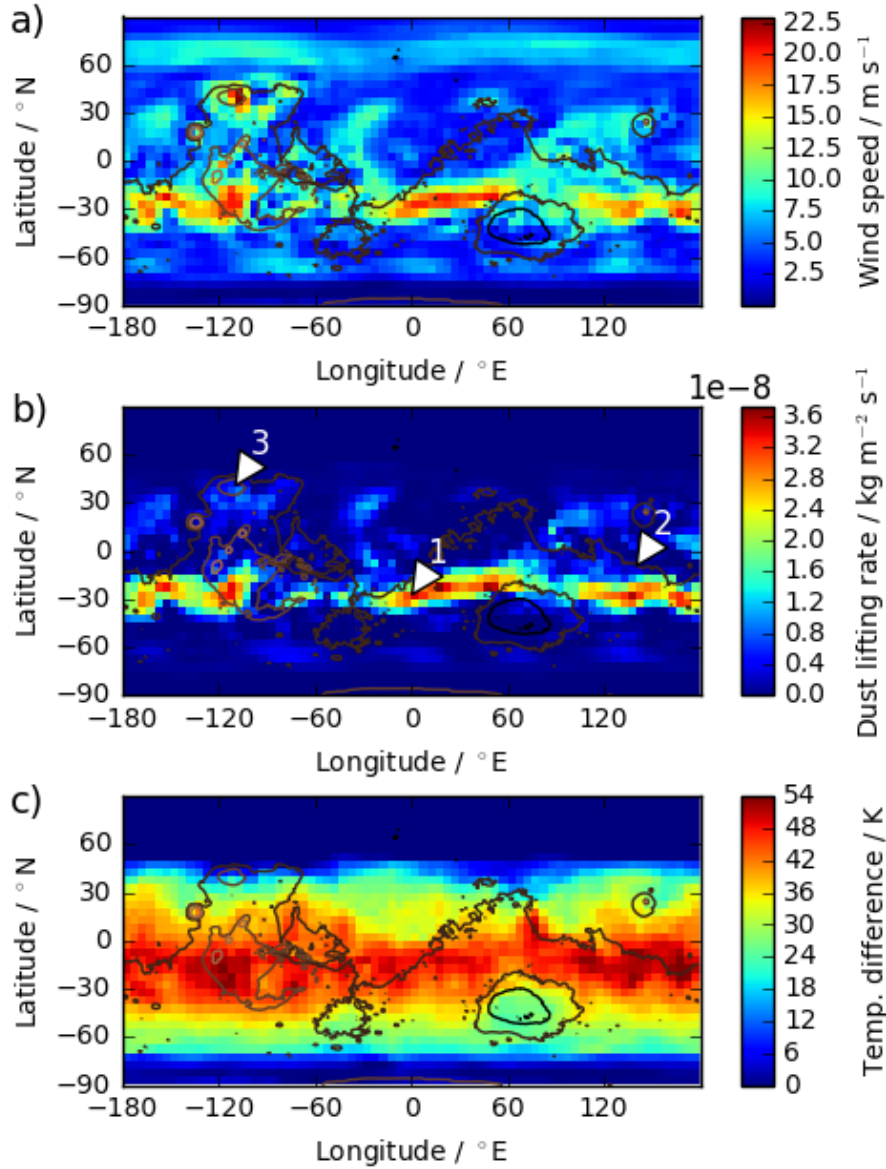


Figure 5.18: Global map of a) near-surface wind speeds, b) dust devil lifting and c) surface-atmosphere temperature difference, $(T_{\text{surf}} - T_{\text{atm}})$. All gridboxes are displayed at a local time of 13:00, providing a global picture of activity at one specific time of sol. Values have been averaged over $L_S = 240\text{--}270^\circ$. Dust devil lifting is possible within the ‘permitted’ sensible heat envelope represented by $(T_{\text{surf}} - T_{\text{atm}}) > 0$, but only occurs at specific locations, as governed by wind speeds. Compare the locations labelled in panel b): 1. -28° N , 0° E (high temperature difference, high winds, high lifting), 2. -10° N , 140° E (high temperature difference, low winds, low lifting), 3. 40° N , -110° E (low temperature difference, high winds, low lifting).

1896 5.4 Comparison With Observations

1897 Validation for the model results was attempted through comparison with obser-
 1898 vations of Martian dust devils obtained from orbit and from the surface. Global
 1899 plots and histograms were compared with orbital observations; more localised
 1900 results were compared with surface observations.

1901 5.4.1 Orbital Observations

1902 There have been limited surveys of global dust devil diurnal variation using
 1903 orbital observations. Some dust devil surveys are temporally constrained by the
 1904 viewing angle provided by the platform: for example, surveys using Mars Global
 1905 Surveyor (MGS) Mars Orbital Camera (MOC) images are restricted to a local
 1906 time of 13:00-15:00 (*Cantor et al.*, 2006), limiting their use for investigations
 1907 into the diurnal variability of any surface phenomena.

1908 *Stanzel et al.* (2008) used Mars Express (MEx) High Resolution Stereo Cam-
 1909 era (HRSC) images to complete a survey of dust devils and their characteristics.
 1910 HRSC images span 06:00 to 20:00; all seasons of the year were included in the
 1911 image survey, and the regions selected for scrutiny had been identified in earlier
 1912 studies as ‘active dust devil areas’. The study observed dust devils in images
 1913 captured after 11:00, recorded a strong peak in dust devil numbers between
 1914 14:00 and 15:00, with a smaller peak between 12:00 and 13:00; it did not ob-
 1915 serve the morning peak in dust devil activity that is evident in the model results.
 1916 However, it should be noted that the number of dust devils observed in orbital
 1917 images is necessarily limited by the resolution of those images: Mars landers
 1918 and rovers have observed many small dust devils that could not currently be
 1919 seen from space (*Stanzel et al.*, 2006).

1920 5.4.2 Surface Observations

1921 Surface observations provide more information on the diurnal variation in dust
 1922 devil lifting than can be gained from orbital observations. Direct investigations
 1923 of Martian dust devils are still limited, but there are a number of studies which
 1924 discuss pressure detections of atmospheric vortices. The two data types are not
 1925 completely equivalent: although all dust devils are vortices, not all vortices en-

train dust. In analysing the model results, it was assumed that all Martian dust devils are similar in their dust lifting efficiency; i.e. the presence of more dust devils results in more dust being lifted, allowing a direct comparison between the number of vortices detected and the amount of lifted dust.

The dust devil activity reported in published studies using surface data can be compared with model results for specific locations on the Martian surface. The surface locations of the landers and rovers discussed in these studies are identified in Table 5.1 and Figure 5.19. For the shorter duration missions (Pathfinder and Phoenix), the studies reported on the full length of the mission; for the multi-year missions (Viking Lander 2 and Mars Exploration Rover Spirit), the studies covered only a portion of the whole mission. Of these comparison studies, only one reported on direct images of dust devils, while four used atmospheric vortex detections.

Lander	Lander location (latitude, ° N × longitude, ° E)
Viking Lander 2 (VL2)	47.97, 134.25
Pathfinder	19.33, -33.55
Phoenix	68.22, -125.70
MER Spirit	-14.61, 175.47
MSL Curiosity	-4.59, 137.44

Table 5.1: Locations of NASA landers, Mars Exploration Rover (MER) Spirit and Mars Science Laboratory (MSL) Curiosity.

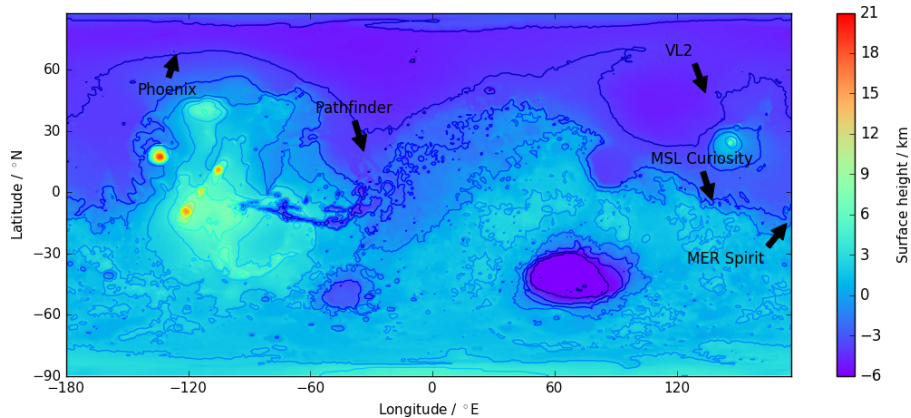


Figure 5.19: Map identifying approximate locations of landers listed in Table 5.1. Surface topography contours mark every 2 km of height.

Based upon the location of a lander or rover, an identification can be made of the gridbox that best correlates with that location. For each location, the diurnal cycle of modelled dust devil lifting is then compared with the published observations, taking into account the time of year at which the observations were captured, as well as the associated local atmospheric dust environment.

Dust devil lifting is affected by the amount of dust present in the local atmosphere primarily through its impact on surface and near-surface temperatures. Atmospheric dust absorbs incident solar radiation, resulting in a heating of the atmosphere and a reduction of surface insolation (Zurek, 1978). A high level of atmospheric dust, such as that observed during dust storms, will cause an increase in near-surface atmospheric temperatures and a decrease in (insolation-driven) surface temperatures. This reduces the surface-to-atmosphere temperature difference ($(T_{\text{surf}} - T_{\text{atm}})$ in Equation 5.1), which results in a reduced amount of surface-level heat available to drive dust devil formation.

The local atmospheric dust environment during a lander's observations can be approximated using the prescribed dust scenarios available within the MGCM (Section 3.4.2). If a dust map has been constructed for the year in which a mission took place (for example, the Phoenix mission landed in MY29), a simulation utilising that year's atmospheric dust loading scenario was used for the comparison analysis. For missions that took place before the earliest constructed dust map (MY24, beginning in July 1998), the modelled optical depth that would be reported at a point on the surface in the vicinity of a lander's position can be compared to the optical depth recorded by that lander during its observations. Experiments were completed utilising multiple dust loading scenarios; results from the closest matching simulation were then used for the analysis.

Figures 5.20 and 5.21 show the diurnal variation in dust devil lifting for each lander or rover location. The envelope encompassing all of the model results obtained through the analysed time period is shown in grey, the average is identified by a solid line. (The reader should note that the amounts of dust lifted across the different lander sites vary by two orders of magnitude).

Figure 5.20a shows modelled dust devil lifting in the vicinity of the VL2 landing site plotted against the left axis; data from the comparison study by Ringrose *et al.* (2003) are plotted against the right axis. The Viking mission

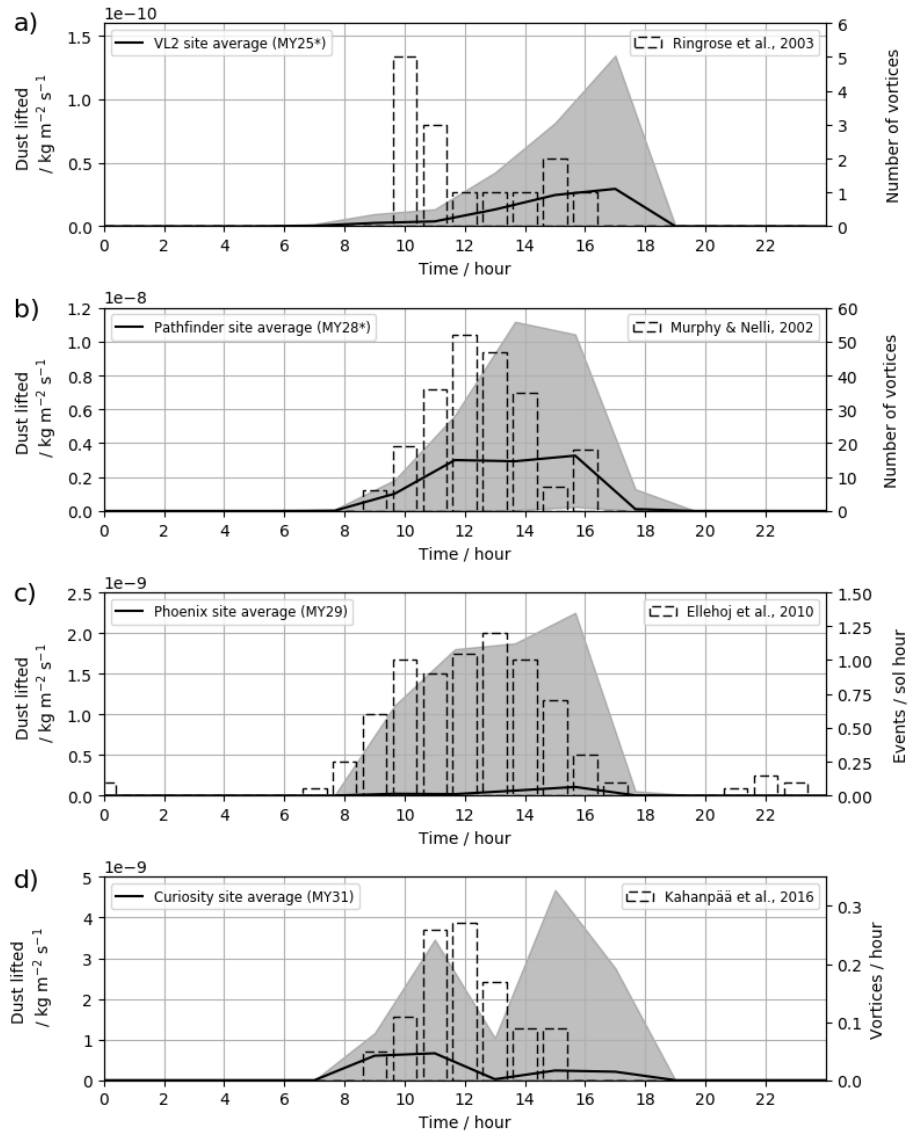


Figure 5.20: Hourly dust devil lifting in the vicinity of four lander/rover sites, plotted against the left vertical axes. For each site, the average is displayed as a black solid line, and the grey shading is the envelope of all model results from the relevant time period. Plot legend includes relevant atmospheric dust loading used in experiment; analogue years indicated with an asterisk, see main text for details. Plotted against the right vertical axes are data from the comparison studies: a) VL2 landing site results and data from *Ringrose et al.* (2003) ($L_S = 117-148^\circ$); b) Pathfinder landing site results and data from *Murphy and Nelli* (2002) ($L_S = 140-190^\circ$); c) Phoenix landing site results and data from *Ellehoj et al.* (2010) ($L_S = 77-148^\circ$); d) MSL Curiosity site results and data from *Kahanpää et al.* (2016) ($L_S = 157^\circ$ MY31 to $L_S = 157^\circ$ MY32). The landers' published dust devil rate is normalised to the availability of meteorological data.

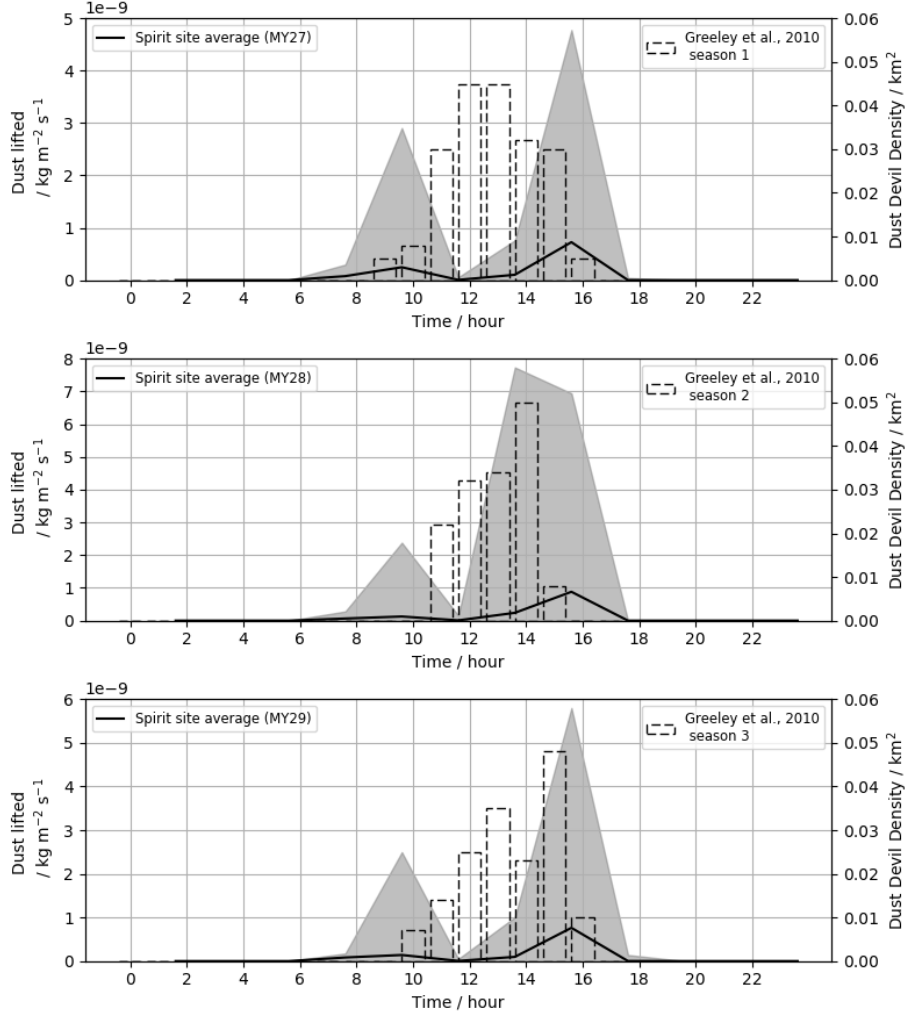


Figure 5.21: Hourly dust devil lifting in the vicinity of the MER Spirit site across the three Mars years considered, plotted against the left vertical axes. Each average (black solid line) is displayed, and the grey shading encompasses all results produced during the time periods (each $L_S = 170\text{--}359^\circ$). Plotted against the right vertical axes are data from the comparison study by *Greeley et al.* (2010).

reached Mars during MY12, a year that experienced large dust storms and a subsequent high atmospheric dust loading. The visible optical depth observed at the VL2 landing site during the earliest portion of the mission ($L_S = 117\text{--}148^\circ$) is reported as $\sim 0.3\text{--}0.4$ (*Pollack et al.*, 1977; *Colburn et al.*, 1989). This is best matched by the visible optical depth simulated in this region at this

time of year in the MGCM simulation using the MY25 dust map; MY25 also experienced a large dust storm.

Figure 5.20b shows modelled dust devil lifting in the vicinity of the Pathfinder landing site plotted against the left axis; data from the comparison study by *Murphy and Nelli* (2002) are plotted against the right axis. The Pathfinder mission took place during MY23, $L_S = 140\text{-}190^\circ$. The visible optical depth observed by the lander varied from ~ 0.4 shortly after landing to ~ 0.6 towards the end of the mission (*Smith and Lemmon*, 1999). The MGCM simulation using the MY28 dust field produces a visible optical depth of ~ 0.5 in this region throughout the length of the mission.

Figure 5.20c shows modelled dust devil lifting in the vicinity of the Pathfinder landing site plotted against the left axis; data from the comparison study by *Ellehoj et al.* (2010) are plotted against the right axis. The Phoenix mission landed in MY29, operating through the period $L_S = 77\text{-}148^\circ$.

Figure 5.20d shows modelled dust devil lifting in the vicinity of the Curiosity site through the first full year (668 sols) of the rover's operation plotted against the left axis; data from the comparison study by *Kahanpää et al.* (2016) are plotted against the right axis. MSL Curiosity landed in MY31, beginning its mission on $L_S = 150^\circ$. This mission is still ongoing.

Figure 5.21 shows modelled dust devil lifting in the vicinity of the Spirit operational site plotted against the left axes; data from the comparison study by *Greeley et al.* (2010) are plotted against the right axes. The long duration of the MER Spirit mission enabled extended surface observations of dust devils, encompassing multiple years. The annual dust devil 'season' observed by the rover spanned the second half of the Martian year, $L_S \sim 175\text{-}355^\circ$. This study covers observations from three full dust devil seasons, spanning MY27-MY29.

The comparisons between modelled results and the observations reported in the aforementioned studies are detailed here and then summarised in Table 5.2.

Mission: Viking Lander 2, **Study:** *Ringrose et al.* (2003).

This study identifies 38 vortices in pressure data recorded during the first 60 sols of the VL2 mission. An afternoon peak in vortex numbers is observed, although it is seen in the early afternoon (13:00-13:30) rather than the anticipated mid-afternoon timing. A higher peak in vortex numbers is seen in the

2010 morning (10:00-10:30). The study’s authors comment on the morning peak,
 2011 suggesting that it is not a peak in ‘naturally generated’ atmospheric phenom-
 2012 ena; instead, at least some of these vortexes are likely to be a result of the local
 2013 wind interacting with the body of the lander itself.

2014 The averaged model results for this location show a diurnal dust devil dis-
 2015 tribution that more closely aligns with that expected by *Ringrose et al.* (2003):
 2016 a peak during the late afternoon, around 17:00 (Figure 5.20a). Within the
 2017 model results there is limited dust devil lifting during the morning, although
 2018 some lifting is still evident before the afternoon peak. The match between the
 2019 observations and model results is described as a ‘partial match’ in Table 5.2, fol-
 2020 lowing the suggestion by the study authors that up to four of the nine morning
 2021 observations could be false positives.

2022 **Mission:** Pathfinder, **Study:** *Murphy and Nelli* (2002).

2023 This study used pressure data to identify 79 vortices passing over or near the
 2024 lander. The pressure data was recorded through the full length of the Pathfinder
 2025 mission: $L_S = 142\text{--}183^\circ$. A peak in vortex numbers is identified around midday,
 2026 between 12:00 and 13:00.

2027 The averaged model results for this location show a relatively flat ‘plateau’
 2028 of afternoon dust devil lifting between 12:00 and 16:00 (Figure 5.20b). However,
 2029 the envelope displaying all the results for this location shows a diurnal distribu-
 2030 tion that is similar in shape to the distribution identified by *Murphy and Nelli*
 2031 (2002), with the peak of the curve shifted approximately one hour later in the
 2032 sol. This comparison is considered a good match.

2033 **Mission:** Phoenix, **Study:** *Ellehoj et al.* (2010).

2034 This study identifies 502 “probable” vortices from drops in pressure data
 2035 that was recorded through the length of the Phoenix mission. The analysis by
 2036 *Ellehoj et al.* (2010) of these vortices is split into those that occurred during the
 2037 period $L_S = 77\text{--}111^\circ$, and those that occurred during the period $L_S = 111\text{--}148^\circ$;
 2038 this split arises from the authors’ observation that the ‘dust devil season’ at the
 2039 lander location began around $L_S = 111^\circ$. In the period outside the dust devil
 2040 season (prior to $L_S = 111^\circ$), vortex observations peak around 12:00. During
 2041 dust devil season ($L_S = 111^\circ$ onwards) the observed dust devil distribution
 2042 appears to show two peaks: one in the morning, around 11:00, and one in the

afternoon, around 13:00. *Ellehoj et al.* (2010) suggest that the true peak in the distribution is around 12:00, and that the apparent bimodality in the data is due to an operational, rather than meteorological, effect: there is a repeated gap in observations every sol during the mission (~ 30 minutes around mid-sol) when the lander paused operations to complete data transfer.

The averaged model results for this location show a peak in dust devil lifting around 16:00 (Figure 5.20c). The averaged values are extremely low, caused by an extended section of the ‘outside dust devil season’ period containing zero modelled dust devil lifting. The observed increase in dust devil activity that is used by *Ellehoj et al.* (2010) to identify the start of the dust devil season is not evident in the model results until $L_S \approx 144^\circ$; the majority of the model results shown in Figure 5.20c occurred through the period $L_S = 144\text{--}148^\circ$. While these results therefore cover a limited period of time, the diurnal distribution is very similar in shape and timing to the observed distribution, albeit including a small spike around 16:00 that is absent from the observed data, and is considered a good match.

Mission: MSL Curiosity, **Study:** *Kahanpää et al.* (2016).

This study identifies 252 vortices in pressure data recorded during the first full year of the Curiosity rover’s mission: 668 sols from $L_S = 157^\circ$ MY31 to $L_S = 157^\circ$ MY32. A peak in vortex numbers is observed between 11:00 and 13:00.

The averaged model results for this location show a bimodal distribution of dust devil lifting, with activity peaking in both the morning and the afternoon (Figure 5.20d). The modelled morning peak, around 11:00, is an hour ahead of the peak in the observed data, but is similar in shape. Afternoon observations identify some vortices, but the modelled peak in the afternoon does not occur in the observations. This comparison is considered a partial match.

In order to complete a thorough survey, the MSL Curiosity study by *Steakley and Murphy* (2016) on vortex activity at Gale crater was also considered for comparison with the model results. *Steakley and Murphy* (2016) identify 245 vortices in pressure data captured through the first 707 sols of the mission; as the reported diurnal variation within these observations is a close match to that reported by *Kahanpää et al.* (2016), only the latter study is used in this

2076 comparison.

2077 **Mission:** MER Spirit, **Study:** *Greeley et al.* (2010).

2078 This study identifies dust devils within images captured by the Spirit rover.
 2079 Three local dust devil seasons were imaged, each of which began around $L_S =$
 2080 181° . Imaging during the latter two seasons was more limited than during the
 2081 first season due to power considerations; later observations were inhibited by
 2082 the rover’s locations being less favourable for viewing dust devils, and were
 2083 also truncated by the arrival of a local dust storm (in the second season). The
 2084 diurnal distributions of dust devil observations in this multi-year survey are
 2085 varied: season 1 (502 observed dust devils) shows a broad peak in ‘dust devil
 2086 density’ between 12:00 and 14:00, season 2 (101 observed dust devils) shows a
 2087 narrower peak between 14:00 and 15:00, and season 3 (127 observed dust devils)
 2088 shows a small early-afternoon peak, between 13:00 and 14:00, and a larger peak
 2089 later in the afternoon, between 15:00 and 16:00.

2090 The averaged model results for this location do not show the same variation:
 2091 the distributions are similar across the three modelled years that match the
 2092 observed seasons, and all three display a bimodal distribution in dust devil
 2093 lifting. In all three years the results envelopes show a small peak in the morning,
 2094 consistently between 09:00 and 10:00, and a larger peak in the afternoon, with
 2095 a maximum between 13:00 and 16:00. Year 1 results are not considered a good
 2096 match with the study’s season 1: although *Greeley et al.* (2010) do identify
 2097 dust devils during both the morning and afternoon periods encompassed by
 2098 the results envelope, the modelled results do not reproduce the mid-sol peak
 2099 of the observations. Year 2 results are a closer match to the study’s season 2,
 2100 showing a broader afternoon peak spanning 13:00 to 16:00, while observations
 2101 peak between 14:00 and 15:00. Year 3 results are a partial match with season
 2102 3: again, the results do not reproduce the observed mid-sol activity, but results
 2103 and observations match closely on the timing of the afternoon peak.

Lander/rover site	MGCM results	Observation results	Comment on match
VL2	Strong afternoon peak (17:00)	Strong peak 10:00-11:00, second peak 15:00-16:00	Partial match: morning lifting present but limited, afternoon lifting late
Pathfinder	Strong afternoon peak (14:00)	Strong peak 12:00-13:00	Good match in shape of distribution, timing similar
Phoenix	Broad span, sharp peak around 16:00	Broad span, peaking 13:00-14:00	Good match to timing of distribution
MER Spirit	Morning and afternoon peaks	Peak spanning mid-sol	Minimal match: mid-sol peak not seen
		Mid-afternoon peak 14:00-15:00	Good match: afternoon lifting encompasses most observations
		Mid-sol lifting, afternoon peak 15:00-16:00	Partial match: mid-sol peak not seen but afternoon peak matches observations
MSL Curiosity	Late morning (11:00) and mid-afternoon (15:00) peaks	Strong peak 11:00-12:00	Partial match: morning peak early, afternoon lifting greater than observed

Table 5.2: Summary of MGCM dust devil lifting results and dust devil observations from the comparison studies, with comment on the match of results to observations. Reproduced from *Chapman et al.* 2017.

2104 The model results are not always a good match with the relevant lan-
 2105 der/rover study, but there are at least four caveats to consider:

- 2106 1. The resolution at which the simulation was completed results in gridboxes
 2107 that cover several hundred square kilometres in area. The data produced
 2108 in such a simulation relate to quantities present in these large-scale grid-
 2109 boxes, not at specific local points upon the surface. The locations used in
 2110 the above comparisons provide the closest possible correlation to the lan-
 2111 der/rover sites. (MSL Curiosity, in particular, is in the deep Gale Crater;
 2112 atmospheric circulations within a crater can vary considerably from large-
 2113 scale circulations outside the crater, e.g. *Tyler and Barnes* 2015.)
- 2114 2. Studies that use pressure data can only detect vortices, and not all vortices
 2115 will necessarily entrain dust. Therefore any survey that draws a direct
 2116 parallel between the number of vortices and the number of dust devils
 2117 may over-estimate the dust devil population.
- 2118 3. The study using image data was sometimes impacted by a restricted field
 2119 of view (rover camera pointing and the local topography) and by the
 2120 mission’s reduced data capture abilities (rover power considerations).
- 2121 4. The model provides a value for the rate of dust lifting by dust devils, but
 2122 this lifting rate contains no information on either the number or the size
 2123 of the dust devils that would be required to lift such an amount of dust.

2124 5.5 Discussion and Summary

2125 The results of this investigation show that, within MGCM simulations, dust
 2126 devil activity displays a wider than anticipated diurnal range. More dust is
 2127 lifted by dust devils during morning hours than was anticipated previously (i.e.
 2128 following terrestrial observations, see Section 5.1), and many locations actually
 2129 experience a peak in dust devil activity before mid-sol, rather than activity
 2130 consistently peaking in the afternoon. There are two possible explanations for
 2131 these results:

- 2132 • the dust devil parameterisation developed for use in MGCMs does not
 2133 provide a good representation of diurnal Martian dust devil behaviour;

- the accepted description of dust devil behaviour on Mars is not complete.

The model results presented herein suggest that the MGCM dust devil parameterisation *does* provide a good representation of Martian dust devil activity throughout the sol. As described in Section 5.4.2 and summarised in Table 5.2, the model results are a reasonably good match to published studies of Martian dust devil observations. All of the comparison studies report observations of dust devils (or the proxy measure: pressure vortices) during morning hours. The observed maximum in dust devil activity is usually after mid-sol, but there is a range in the timing of that peak in the studies. Across the seven comparisons made with the published studies (counting each of the three seasons in *Greeley et al.* (2010) separately), three show a good match between modelled results and observations, three show a partial match, and one shows a minimal match. These studies comprise the majority of investigations into Martian dust devils using surface observations, from which diurnal timing information can be extracted.

Studies that use orbital observations to survey Martian dust devils have not identified a high level of dust devil activity during morning hours. These studies are few in number, and it should be noted that the reported diurnal distribution of dust devils as observed from orbit is not a good match to the majority of surface observations. Images used for such surveys are often temporally constrained by spacecraft positioning (*Fisher et al.*, 2005; *Cantor et al.*, 2006), rendering them of limited use for a study into the diurnal variation of surface or atmospheric phenomena. Images captured from orbit also enforce a bias towards the observation of large dust devils, and so the surveys may not accurately capture the full dust devil population (*Stanzel et al.*, 2008).

If the parameterisation is a good representation of dust devils, then it is proposed that the generally accepted description of dust devil behaviour on Mars is incomplete. Assumptions of Martian dust devil behaviour are based upon observations of terrestrial dust devils, and the dust devil parameterisation within the MGCM was designed to reproduce the terrestrially observed diurnal pattern. However, Martian dust devil activity does not necessarily peak in the early afternoon, and local wind speeds may act as a strong governor of the timings of dust devils.

2167 The dust devil parameterisation in operation within the MGCM has been
 2168 used as the basis for similar parameterisations in the NASA Ames Mars GCM
 2169 and the GFDL Mars GCM. Parameterised dust devil activity depends upon
 2170 the sensible heat available to the dust devil and its thermodynamic efficiency.
 2171 This thermodynamic efficiency (i.e. how readily it converts the available heat
 2172 into work) is driven by the depth of the local CBL, which in turn is driven
 2173 by atmospheric heating due to insolation and thus follows a predictable diurnal
 2174 pattern. Most of the parameters used to calculate the sensible heat flux available
 2175 to the dust devil also follow predictable diurnal patterns; the only exception is
 2176 the near-surface wind speed. It is the variability within the near-surface wind
 2177 speed that introduces variability into the diurnal timings of dust devils.

2178 The near-surface wind on Mars arises from a complex interaction of local
 2179 and large-scale influences, affecting both the magnitude and direction of the
 2180 resulting flow. Global-scale diurnal thermal tides are driven by solar heating;
 2181 local variations in surface properties affect the smaller-scale flow of such tides
 2182 (*Wilson and Hamilton, 1996*). Surface thermal properties (e.g. variations in
 2183 albedo and thermal inertia) have a changing effect on the flow of local-scale
 2184 winds throughout the diurnal heating cycle (*Read and Lewis, 2004*), and varia-
 2185 tions in topography give rise to slope winds (upslope during daylight hours and
 2186 downslope during the night). Interactions between these locally-forced winds
 2187 and other large-scale, regional circulations (e.g. lower-level Hadley circulation)
 2188 add to the complexity (*Toigo and Richardson, 2003*).

2189 Observations of the wider meteorological context within which terrestrial
 2190 dust devil arise suggest that mild ambient winds must be present for the initi-
 2191 ation of dust devils, but that high winds may inhibit their formation. (*Sinclair*
 2192 (1969) observed dust devil numbers decreasing as wind speeds increased; *Oke*
 2193 *et al.* (2007) reported the presence of dust devils only when ambient wind speeds
 2194 were between 1.5 and 7.5 m s⁻¹; *Kurgansky et al.* (2010) observed more dust
 2195 devils when wind speeds were between 2 and 8 m s⁻¹ than otherwise.) One
 2196 proposal is that any convective vortices beginning to form in high wind condi-
 2197 tions will suffer a destructive shearing of the upper portion of the vortex from
 2198 the lower portion due to the wind speeds present (*Oke et al., 2007*); models of
 2199 terrestrial dust devil populations have found that the level of dust devil activity

2200 can be curbed using increasing wind speeds (*Lyons et al.*, 2008; *Jemmett-Smith*
2201 *et al.*, 2015).

2202 In comparison, observations have been made of Martian dust devils travel-
2203 ling at speeds considerably faster than those achieved by terrestrial dust devils.
2204 Martian dust devils have been observed travelling in the direction of the ambient
2205 wind (*Stanzel et al.*, 2008; *Reiss et al.*, 2014b) at horizontal speeds of around 27
2206 m s^{-1} calculated using surface observations (*Greeley et al.*, 2010), and up to 59
2207 m s^{-1} calculated using images captured from orbit (*Stanzel et al.*, 2008). High
2208 resolution numerical simulations of Martian dust devils (*Toigo et al.*, 2003) were
2209 able to form dust devils either in ‘no wind’ or ‘high wind’ scenarios, but did
2210 not produce dust devils in low or medium wind scenarios. Such observations
2211 and modelling may indicate that ambient wind speeds are another aspect of
2212 terrestrial dust devil theory that cannot be transposed directly to the Martian
2213 environment: limited *in situ* data are currently available from which to assess
2214 Martian near-surface wind speeds (*Balme et al.*, 2012), but if there is a sys-
2215 tematic inhibition of dust devil formation on Mars due to high ambient wind
2216 speeds, it must occur at much higher speeds than those curbing terrestrial dust
2217 devils.

2218 Theories of dust devil formation should be further developed, or perhaps
2219 need to be tailored specifically, to be applicable to an environment in which
2220 vortices form in a thin, cold atmosphere over a desert covering the entire sur-
2221 face of a planet. *Ringrose et al.* (2003) remark that Martian dust devils could
2222 form earlier in the diurnal cycle than the terrestrial counterpart due a combi-
2223 nation of the lower dry adiabatic lapse rate within the Martian atmosphere and
2224 a higher thermal efficiency of convective plumes on Mars, somewhat comple-
2225 menting an analysis of terrestrial dust devils in which a modelled lower lapse
2226 rate widened the diurnal range of potential dust lifting activity (*Jemmett-Smith*
2227 *et al.*, 2015). It has also been suggested that dust devils may be “systemati-
2228 cally more common” within low pressure environments (*Lorenz and Radebaugh*,
2229 2016).

2230 Recent parameterisations of terrestrial dust lifting have had some success,
2231 such as the Convective Turbulent Dust Emission (CDTE) parameterisation of
2232 *Klose and Shao* (2013), which uses statistical distributions of wind stress in

2233 Large Eddy Simulations (LES) to describe the stochastic nature of convective
 2234 dust lifting phenomena. The CDTE parameterisation has been tested against
 2235 observations of dust lifting in China and Australia, and has been successful in
 2236 predicting the diurnal periods of dust lifting in the tested regions, as well as
 2237 the amount of dust lifted. Dust lifting by large eddies may also be an impor-
 2238 tant phenomena on Mars (e.g. *Spiga et al.*, 2010); however, terrestrially-based
 2239 parameterisations such as CDTE include consideration of soil moisture and veg-
 2240 etation, and are tailored to a particle size distribution that is representative of
 2241 Earth soils (*Klose et al.*, 2014). Such a parameterisations would have to be
 2242 modified carefully for application within the Martian environment.

2243 While an improvement of dust devil theory is necessary, it is also possible
 2244 that the parameterisation needs improvement. For example, consider the input
 2245 heat source driving the dust devil ‘heat engine’ model. On Earth the sensible
 2246 heat flux is a large factor in the total surface energy budget (*Larsen et al.*, 2002),
 2247 and so within models of terrestrial dust devils this flux is the dominant heat
 2248 source driving their formation (e.g. *Koch and Rennó*, 2005). In contrast, the
 2249 lower density of the Martian atmosphere means that the surface energy budget
 2250 calculation on Mars is dominated by radiative fluxes (*Petrosyan et al.*, 2011).
 2251 It follows that a truly accurate Martian dust devil parameterisation may need
 2252 to incorporate a more complex representation of the amount of heat available
 2253 at the Martian surface-atmosphere boundary for dust devil formation.

Chapter 6

Case Study: ExoMars EDM Landing Site

6.1 Introduction

The European Space Agency (ESA) ExoMars 2016 mission to Mars included the ExoMars Entry Demonstrator Module (EDM) Schiaparelli. This module descended through the Martian atmosphere on 19th October 2016. Unfortunately the landing was not successful and Schiaparelli did not return any data from the surface. The module did, however, transmit data during its descent: data captured by engineering sensors and telemetry data from the module's guidance, navigation and control system. By combining data on the module's reported speed and attitude with dynamic modelling of its motion through the atmosphere, the ExoMars AMELIA (Atmospheric Mars Entry and Landing Investigations and Analysis) team (*Ferri et al.*, 2012) have been able to reconstruct the EDM's trajectory during most of the entry and descent phase of the mission (*Aboudan et al.*, submitted).

Following this reconstruction, the AMELIA team have retrieved profiles of atmospheric density, temperature and wind speed (*Ferri et al.*, 2012, 2017; *Aboudan et al.*, submitted). These profiles extend from ~ 104 km to ~ 2.8 km above the average MOLA radius (as the landing site is 1.44 km below this average radius, the profiles cover ~ 105 km to ~ 4.2 km above the Martian surface)

and span a time period of approximately 3 minutes, ending at around 13:00 local time. The descent took place during the Southern Hemisphere summer, at $244.4^\circ L_S$.

This chapter investigates the EDM’s descent trajectory as a case study assessing how results from MGCM experiments compare with spacecraft data; of particular interest are the behaviours of low-level wind speeds.

Results from mesoscale model experiments are included for further comparison. Previous comparisons of global-scale and mesoscale modelling have focused largely on areas containing small-scale topographical variations that are not present in the global scale models (e.g. *Rafkin et al.*, 2001; *Kass et al.*, 2003; *Toigo and Richardson*, 2003; *Michaels et al.*, 2006). This work considers the relatively flat topography of the Schiaparelli site – a location that is more representative of the majority of historical Martian landing sites than areas that contain severe, small-scale topographical variation.

Section 6.2 outlines the spacecraft data and identifies the models used in this research. In Section 6.3 the results of modelling experiments are presented and compared with spacecraft data: atmospheric temperature and density vertical profiles (Section 6.3.1), wind speed vertical profiles (Section 6.3.2) and surface-level dust lifting processes (Section 6.3.3). In Section 6.3.4 the discrepancies in the results obtained from the different-scale models are discussed. Section 6.4 summarises this work and details recommendations.

6.2 Data Sources and Method

6.2.1 Spacecraft Data

The EDM crashed near the edge of its planned landing ellipse in Meridiani Planum: -2.05° N, -6.2° E. Figure 6.1 shows this location on a global map; Figure 6.2 shows a closer view of the landing ellipse (*Pacifici et al.*, 2014) and illustrates the terrain of the local environment.

Figure 6.3 shows the spacecraft’s reconstructed trajectory from an altitude of ~ 100 km down to the surface. Data are missing for the central portion of this trajectory due to the transmission blackout caused by the plasma sheath that

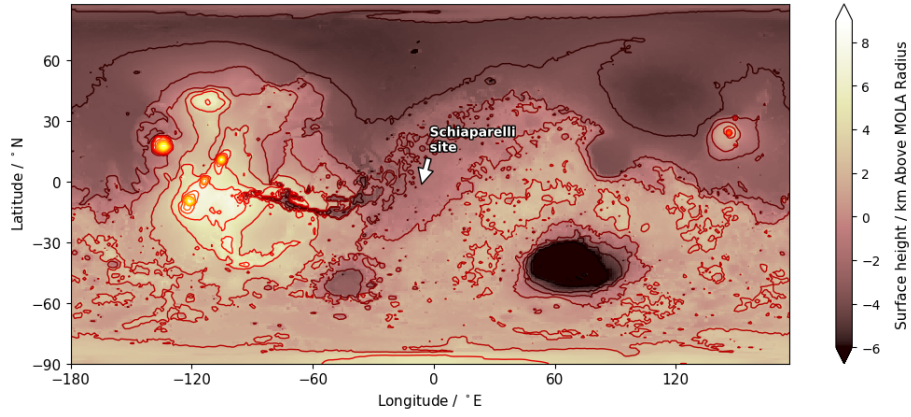


Figure 6.1: EDM Schiaparelli planned landing site.

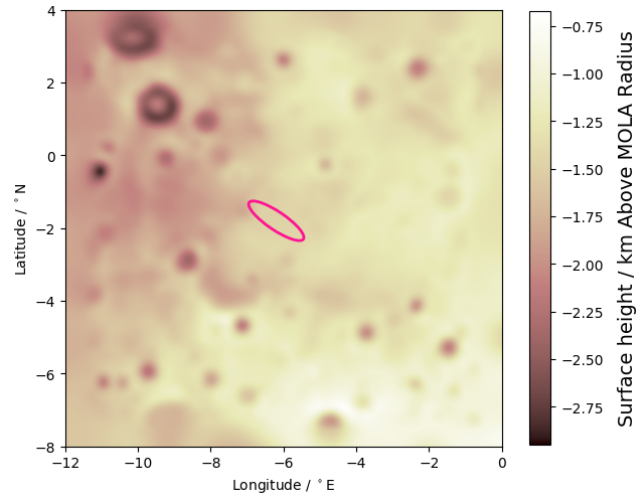


Figure 6.2: EDM Schiaparelli planned landing ellipse in Meridiani Planum.

2305 develops around spacecraft during descent into an atmosphere. This portion of
 2306 the descent, and the final few kilometres, have therefore been interpolated. The
 2307 trajectory shown here was used to identify the model gridboxes from which to
 2308 extract the vertical profiles for data comparison.

2309 The calculated profiles for atmospheric density and temperature were pro-
 2310 vided by members of the AMELIA team; these profiles include raw data for the
 2311 regions outside the plasma blackout and interpolated data through the missing
 2312 portion of the trajectory. The raw data covers descent altitudes of 104-68 km

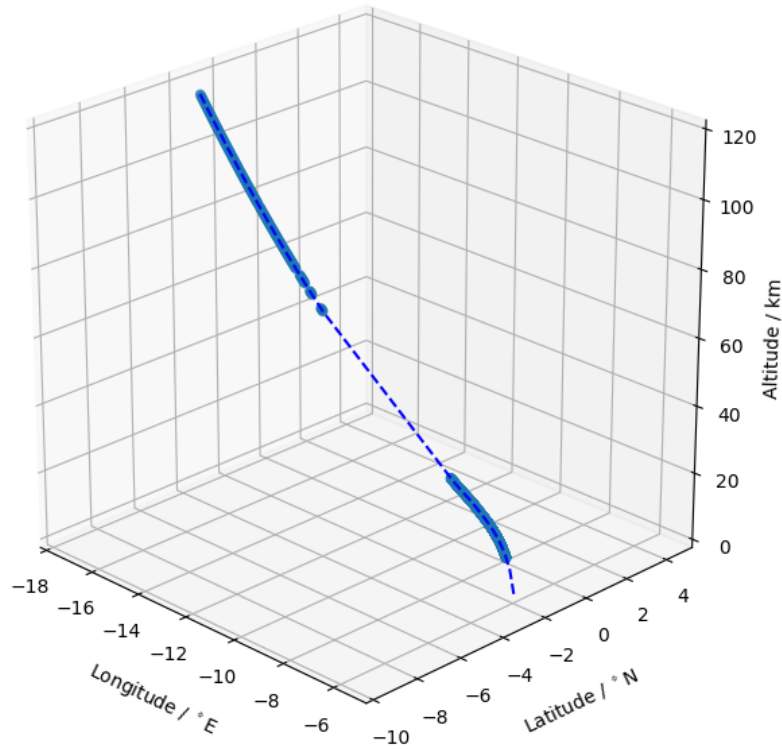


Figure 6.3: Reconstructed descent trajectory of the EDM, from an altitude of 100 km down to the surface. Markers indicate points in the descent for which data has been retrieved; dotted lines indicate portions of the trajectory that have been extrapolated.

2313 Above MOLA Radius (AMR)¹ above the blackout (although this data coverage
 2314 is patchy between ~ 79 -68 km AMR) and 30-2.8 km AMR below the black-
 2315 out. The AMELIA team also produced smoothed profiles (see later figures) by
 2316 iteratively interpolating the raw data (*Aboudan et al.*, submitted).

2317 Data on wind speed and direction were reconstructed by the AMELIA team
 2318 using the motion of the EDM during parachute descent (*Ferri et al.*, 2017;
 2319 *Aboudan et al.*, submitted). These profiles only encompass altitudes 8.4-2.8
 2320 AMR.

¹Altitudes within this chapter will be given as a height Above MOLA Radius (AMR) for ease of comparison with the spacecraft data source documents.

2321 6.2.2 Models

2322 The MGCM used in this work is that described previously (see Chapter 3).
 2323 The mesoscale model used is the LMD Martian Mesoscale Model (MMM),
 2324 as described by *Spiga and Forget* (2009). The subroutines governing physi-
 2325 cal processes within the MMM are the same as those used within the MGCM;
 2326 the dynamical core is based on the National Center for Atmospheric Research
 2327 (NCAR) Advanced Research Weather Research and Forecasting (AR-WRF)
 2328 model (*Skamarock and Klemp*, 2008). For the experiments discussed herein, ini-
 2329 tial and boundary conditions for the MMM simulations were constructed from
 2330 an MGCM results file (see Section 6.3.1 for comments on the selected MGCM
 2331 file).

2332 MMM simulations can be completed using a single resolution domain or a
 2333 configuration of nested domains, in which each domain has a higher spatial res-
 2334 olution than the one outside it. The size of the area to be modelled within an
 2335 experiment is set through selection of the horizontal resolution and the number
 2336 of gridpoints. The MMM experiment used in this work contained three nested
 2337 domains operating with one-way feedback, meaning that outer domains affect
 2338 inner domains but the reverse is not true. While two-way nesting has been
 2339 shown to produce more accurate results in areas that include complex features
 2340 (*Urrego-Blanco et al.*, 2016), this is dependent on the specific nesting technique
 2341 implemented (*Soriano et al.*, 2002), and one-way nesting is considered sufficient
 2342 for short-term simulations in less complex areas (*Qi et al.*, 2018). As simula-
 2343 tions involving two-way feedback are also more computationally expensive the
 2344 decision was taken not to use the method in this work.

2345 While the MGCM parameterisations of the dust cycle were ported into the
 2346 MMM during its development, the representation within the model of the pro-
 2347 cesses involved in this cycle, including surface dust lifting, has not been explored
 2348 before now (*Spiga and Forget*, 2009; *Spiga and Lewis*, 2010). The MMM ex-
 2349 periment analysed in this chapter includes surface dust lifting through both
 2350 near-surface wind stress (NSWS) and dust devils, and compares these results
 2351 with those of MGCM experiments.

2352 In order to place the EDM data in a wider climatological context, the space-

craft data are also compared against data extracted from the Mars Climate Database (MCD). The MCD is a freely available database of Martian meteorological fields and statistics constructed from the results of multiple, long-term climate simulations completed using GCMs (both the LMD and UK versions) and validated against observations (*Lewis et al.*, 1999; *Millour et al.*, 2015; *Forget et al.*, 2015).

Model Resolutions

Figure 6.4 shows vertical profiles of atmospheric temperature data extracted from MGCM experiments that were completed at different horizontal and vertical resolutions; refer back to Section 4.2 for more detail on specific MGCM resolutions.

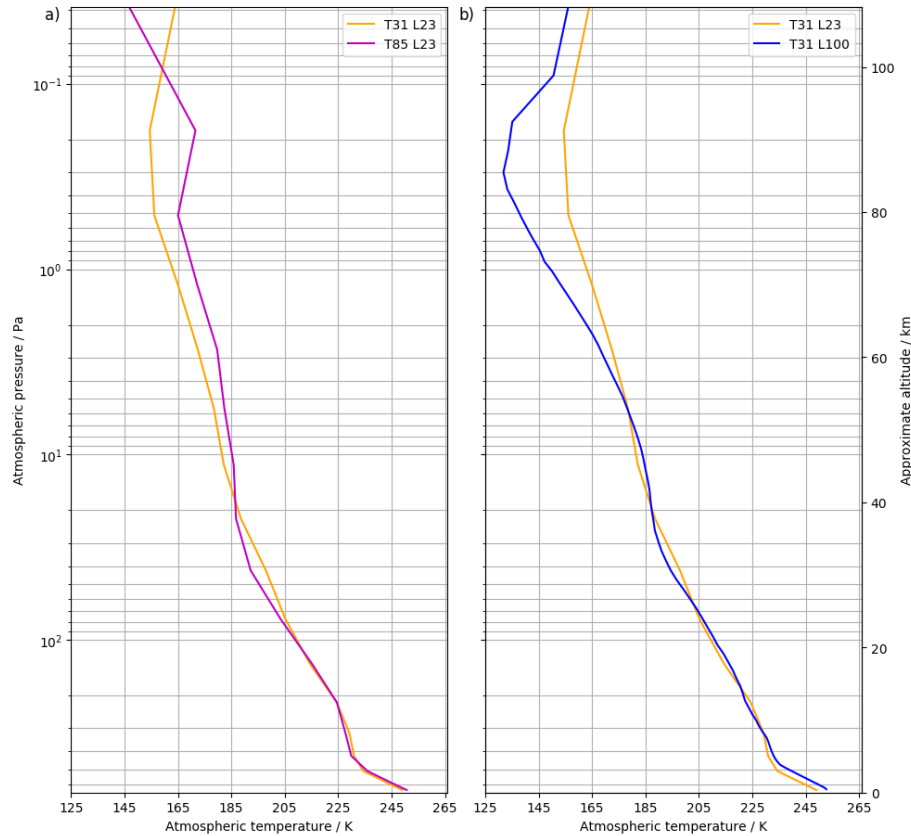


Figure 6.4: Vertical profiles of atmospheric temperature from MGCM experiments completed at different resolutions: a) varying horizontal resolution, b) varying vertical resolution.

As noted in Chapter 4, analysing the high-altitude variations between model resolutions is beyond the scope of this research (although these variations should be noted for future work involving high-level atmospheric processes). This study shall focus primarily on atmospheric behaviour at lower altitudes; practically speaking, this restricts direct comparisons with EDM data to altitudes below ~ 30 km, i.e. below the plasma blackout region.

Figure 6.4a shows the vertical profiles taken from MGCM experiments completed at two horizontal resolutions: T31 and T85 (both using 23 vertical layers). While Chapter 4 concluded that the typical ‘climate modelling’ resolution of T31 was not sufficient when studying surface-level processes, it appears that for a vertical profile of atmospheric temperature taken along the EDM’s trajectory at this point in the Martian year, there is little variation in results obtained using different horizontal resolutions. The Root Mean Square Deviation (RMSD) between the T31 results and the T85 results is 5.52 K; in the region below 30 km altitude this decreases to 2.51 K. This similarity across resolutions was expected to a certain extent, as the area chosen for the EDM’s landing zone is relatively flat and level at the scales of these model resolutions.

Figure 6.4b shows the differences in the vertical profiles taken from T31 experiments completed at multiple vertical resolutions: 23 vertical layers (L23) and 100 vertical layers (L100). The RMSD between the L23 results and the L100 results is 11.69 K, which decreases to 4.50 K when only the region below 30 km altitude is considered.

Given the similar shapes and small RMSD values of these atmospheric temperature profiles, and the fact that the spacecraft data are reported at a high vertical resolution, results from a T31L100 experiment are used for comparison with the EDM atmospheric profile data in the following work. The data selected for analysis are six vertical profiles, each relating to a different sol within $4^\circ L_S$ (around 6 sols) of the descent date of the EDM. The precise timings of these profiles range from 12:25 to 13:40, while the EDM descended at a local time of 13:00. This spread of profile timings was initially selected on the basis of the available data outputs and then examined for any identifiable progression with time. It was found that the variability in the data across the hour-long timeslot was comparable to the variability between sols, and these profiles are thus used

confidently as a representative set of vertical profiles at the time of the EDM's descent. The profiles extend from the surface up to an altitude of ~ 100 km. With regards to surface-level processes, a higher horizontal resolution MGCM experiment was considered: a T85L25 experiment. The rationale for this choice is explained in Section 6.3.3.

The MMM experiment used in this work involved three nested domains of increasing resolution. The data used in the following analysis are from five vertical profiles taken from five consecutive days within $4^\circ L_S$ of the descent date of the EDM; the profiles all relate to a local time of 1336 (the MMM outputs data every hour, timed from midnight at the meridian). The profiles extend from the surface up to an altitude of ~ 50 km.

Table 6.1 summarises the model resolutions used in this work.

Model	Vertical layers, extent in altitude	Gridbox resolution at -2° N / km
MGCM		
T31L100	100, ~ 100 km	296×296
T85L25	25, ~ 100 km	111×111
Mesoscale	60, ~ 50 km	
Domain 1		63×63
Domain 2		21×21
Domain 3		7×7

Table 6.1: Model resolutions used in this research.

2409 6.3 Results and Discussion

2410 6.3.1 Atmospheric Temperature and Density Profiles

2411 An initial atmospheric temperature comparison is shown in Figure 6.5, in which
 2412 profiles from a number of climate scenarios and atmospheric dust loadings avail-
 2413 able within the MCD are shown against the EDM raw and smoothed data. For
 2414 clarity, the multiple profiles extracted from the MCD have been split across two
 2415 panels: broadly, profiles that are a good match to the EDM data have been
 2416 plotted on the left (Fig. 6.5a) and profiles that are not a good match to the
 2417 EDM data have been plotted on the right (Fig. 6.5b). The profiles that are
 2418 not such a good match to the spacecraft data include those drawn from sce-
 2419 narios that utilise a high atmospheric dust loading – such as the dust storm
 2420 scenario, the MY25 scenario (a year that experienced a global dust storm), and
 2421 a dusty non-storm atmosphere (the ‘Warm’ scenario), which all exhibit high
 2422 optical depths of $\tau \gtrsim 2$ in this region during southern summer months – as well
 2423 as the ‘Cold’ scenario, which relates to an atmosphere that is mostly clear of
 2424 dust (i.e. a low optical depth of $\tau = 0.35$ in the summer). The profiles that are
 2425 a good match to the EDM data include those drawn from scenarios using rela-
 2426 tively low dust loadings (summer $\tau = 0.8$ -1.1): scenarios corresponding to dust
 2427 loadings observed across multiple Martian years that did not experience global
 2428 dust storms (MY24, MY26-32) and the ‘Climate’ scenario, which uses a ‘rep-
 2429 resentative standard’ dust distribution constructed by averaging optical depth
 2430 observations through those years. Given the match between the temperature
 2431 profiles from the low dust MCD scenarios and the EDM data, it is reasonable to
 2432 assert that the module descended through an atmosphere containing relatively
 2433 low amounts of atmospheric dust.

2434 A preliminary comparison was also made against MGCM data, in which
 2435 only the regions outside the plasma blackout were compared, i.e. model profile
 2436 deviation from spacecraft interpolated data was not considered. In the previous
 2437 chapters the MY24 scenario has been used as a standard ‘low dust’ scenario in all
 2438 experiments (refer back to Section 3.4.2 for more detail on the atmospheric dust
 2439 fields implemented in the MGCM); the MY25 scenario provides a ‘high dust’
 2440 comparison. Figure 6.6 shows the EDM temperature profile plotted against tem-

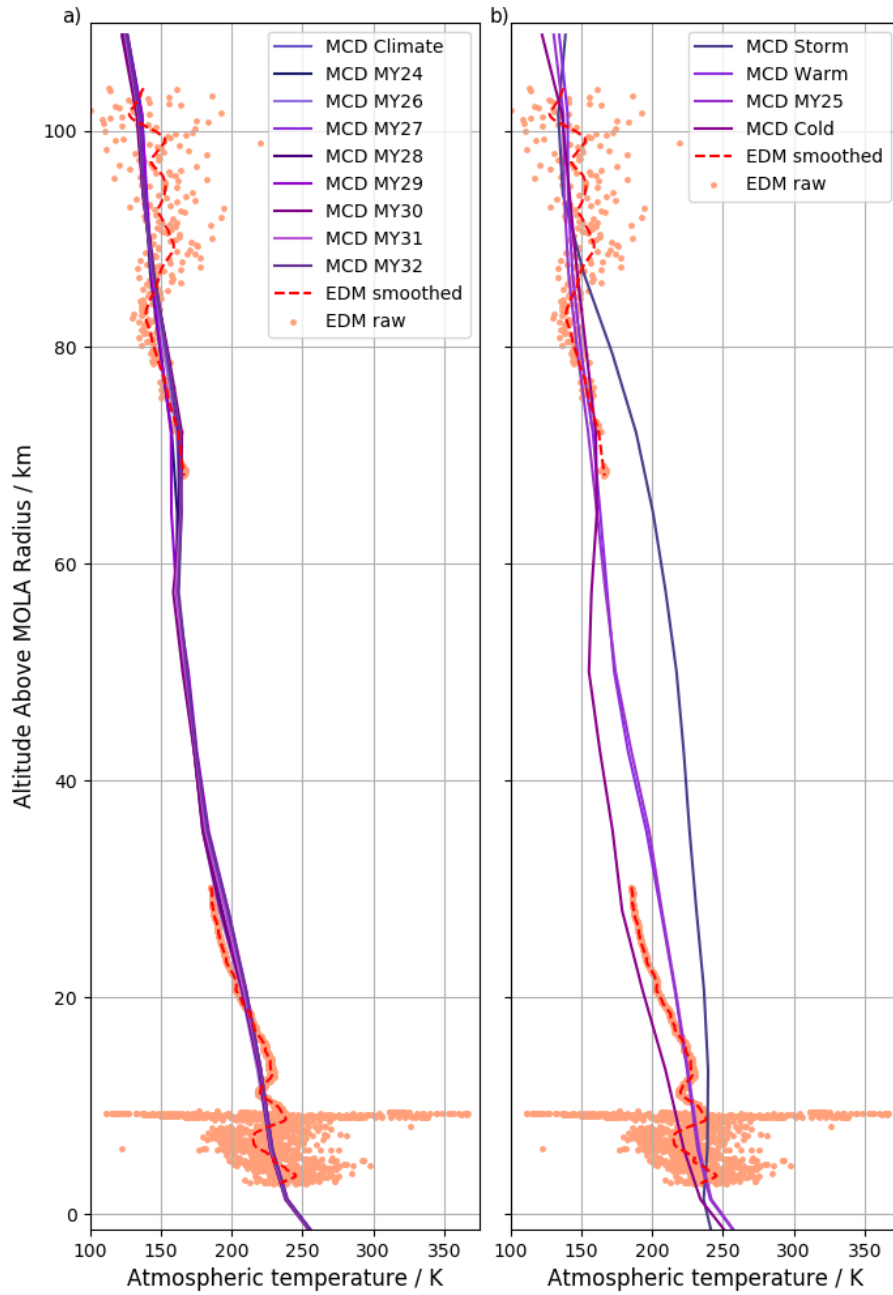


Figure 6.5: Comparison of EDM raw and smoothed data with atmospheric temperature profiles extracted from the Mars Climate Database, shown across two panels solely for clarity. a) Multiple profiles that display a good match with the spacecraft data. b) Profiles extracted from the MCD that display a poorer match with the spacecraft data.

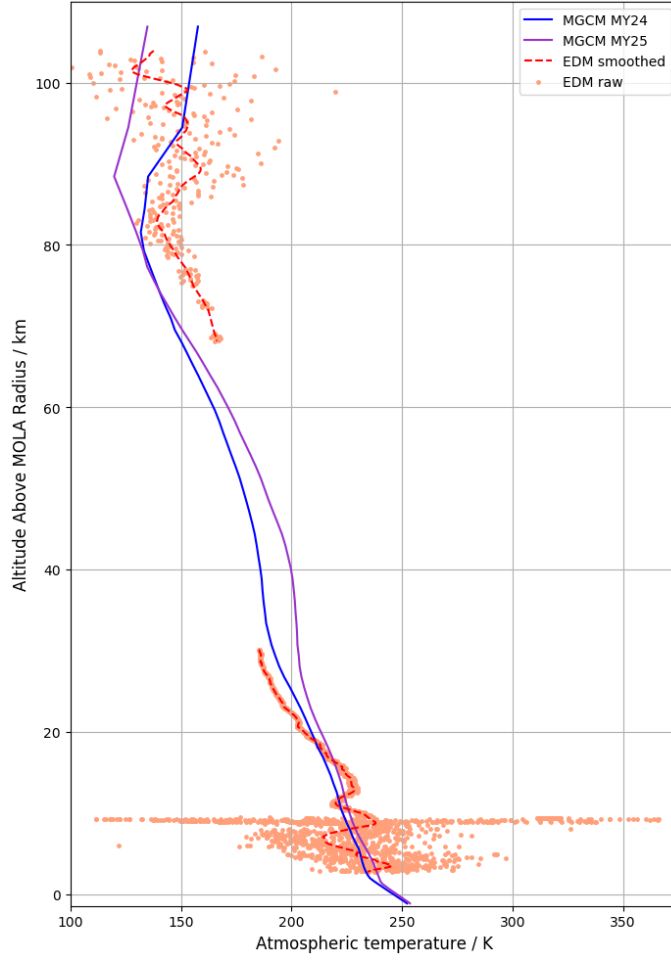


Figure 6.6: Atmospheric temperature profiles from MGCM experiments using ‘low’ (MY24) and ‘high’ (MY25) atmospheric dust loadings, alongside raw and smoothed EDM data. MGCM data are averaged over six individual profiles.

2441 perature profiles from MGCM experiments completed using MY24 and MY25
 2442 dust scenarios. The RMSDs between modelled data and the smoothed EDM
 2443 data were calculated: the MY24 profile has an RMSD of 9.79 K through the
 2444 full height of the profile, decreasing to 7.26 K for data below an altitude of 30
 2445 km; the MY25 profile has an RMSD of 15.35 K through the full height of the
 2446 profile, decreasing to 9.37 K below 30 km. The MY24 profile is a better match
 2447 to the data than the MY25 profile; therefore, the decision was taken to use
 2448 MGCM experiments completed using the low dust MY24 scenario for further
 2449 comparison with EDM data.

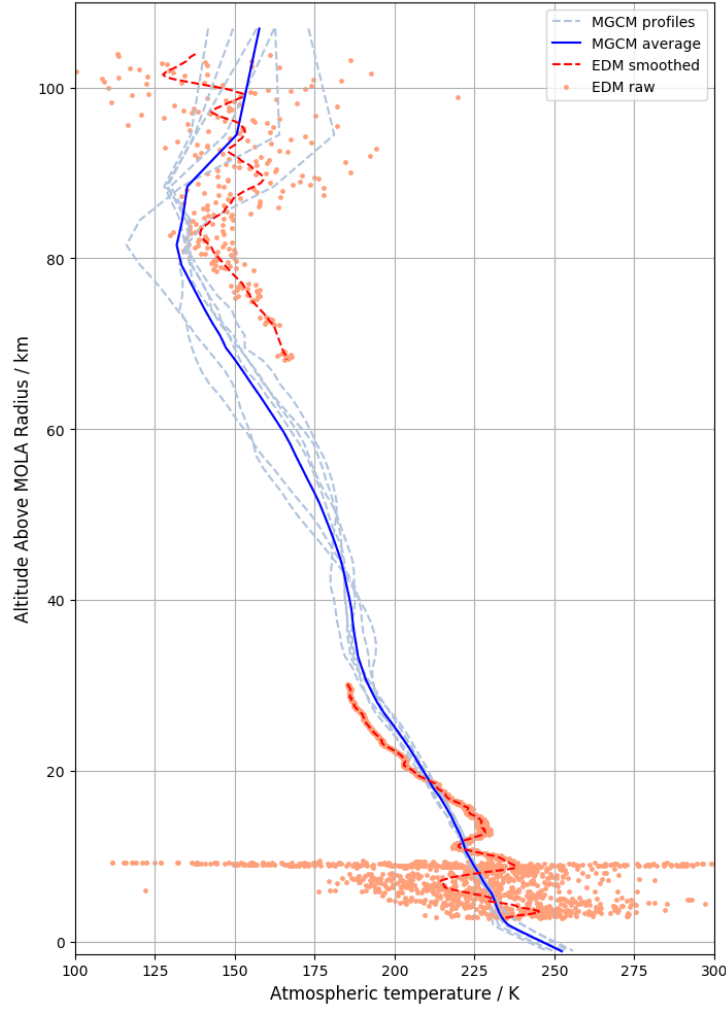


Figure 6.7: Comparison of model and EDM atmospheric temperature vertical profiles. Model data in dashed lines show data from individual profiles, solid line indicates the average.

Figure 6.7 shows the MGCM T31L100 individual and average atmospheric temperature profiles alongside the raw and smoothed EDM data. Figure 6.8 shows atmospheric temperature profiles from MMM experiments. The three profiles in this figure are averages across the five vertical profiles extracted from each nested resolution domain: 63 km, 21 km, 7 km. As expected, the trend across the three resolutions is very similar, with only a deviation of a few degrees at low altitudes (below 2 km AMR).

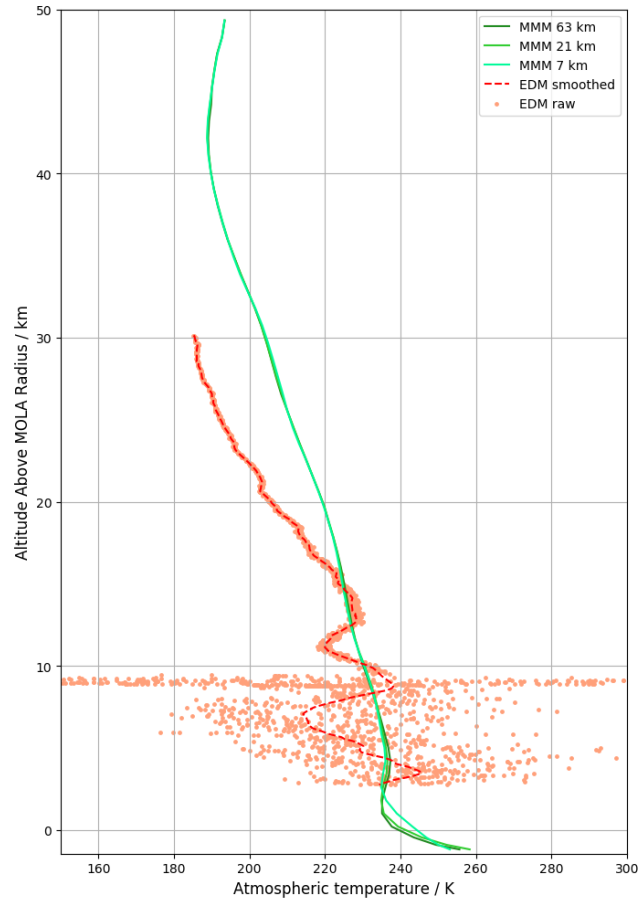


Figure 6.8: Comparison of model and EDM atmospheric temperature vertical profiles. Model lines indicate the average across five profiles, for each modelled resolution domain. The three domains exhibit very similar behaviour for the majority of this vertical profile, and consequently overlay each other for most of the height depicted here.

Figure 6.9 shows MGCM and MMM atmospheric density profiles against EDM data. At altitudes above the plasma blackout the MGCM density profile is not a good match to the EDM data, with some model values diverging from the spacecraft data by an order of magnitude. This discrepancy is not unexpected; as noted previously, the MGCM used within these experiments is accepted as less representative of the Martian atmosphere at the top of the range of modelled altitudes due to multiple factors (e.g. atmospheric sponge layers, limited atmospheric chemistry, no interaction with a thermosphere model). More focus is therefore given here to comparing the profiles within the lower portion of the atmosphere.

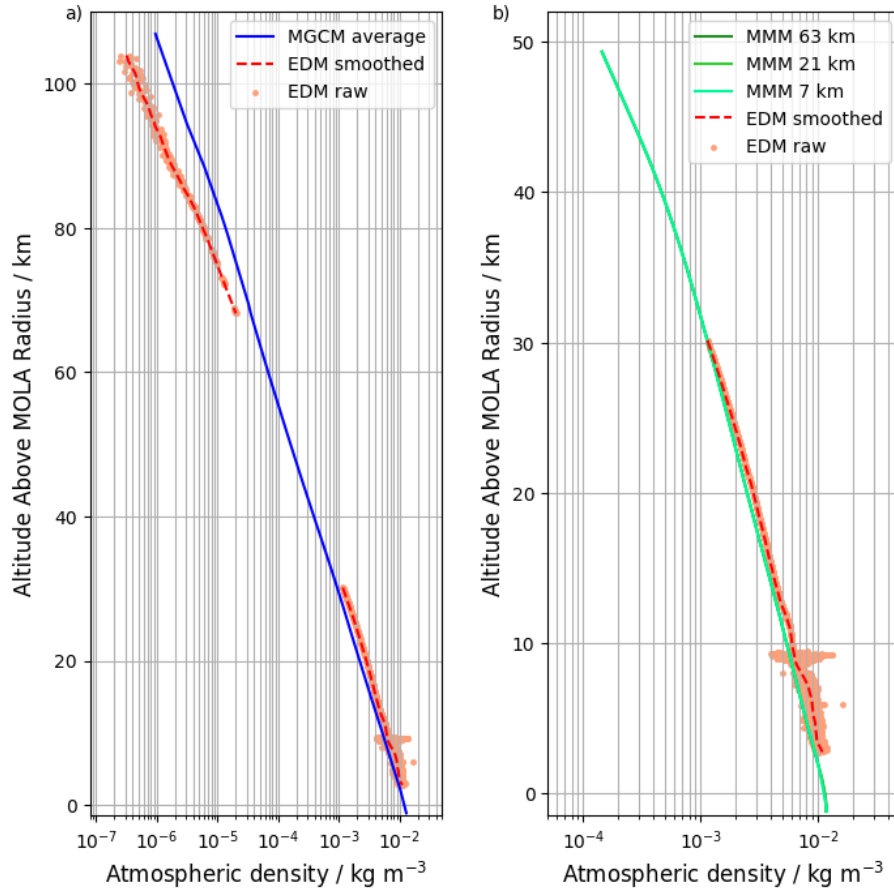


Figure 6.9: Comparison of model and EDM atmospheric density vertical profiles. a) MGCM data are averaged across six profiles. b) MMM data are averaged across five profiles within each resolution (which display very similar behaviour and consequently overlay each other).

2467 The portion of the atmosphere below the plasma blackout is shown in Figure
 2468 6.10. The density values in the MMM profile are a closer match to the EDM
 2469 data than those in the MGCM profile, exhibiting an average deviation of around
 2470 10% from the EDM data, while the MGCM data exhibits an average deviation
 2471 of more than 17% from the EDM data, see Figure 6.11. However, this figure
 2472 also shows that it is the MGCM data that has a trend more similar to that of
 2473 the EDM data: as the profiles descend from 30 to ~ 9 km AMR the deviation
 2474 of the MMM data from the EDM data tends to grow, while the deviation of
 2475 the MGCM data tends to reduce. The values of the MMM data are close to
 2476 the EDM profile at a height of 30 km AMR but shift away with decreasing
 2477 altitude, while the MGCM profile is more consistent in its relationship to the
 2478 EDM profile.

2479 The raw EDM density data below ~ 9.5 km AMR are spread very widely. It is
 2480 not a coincidence that the reported height at which the spacecraft's parachute
 2481 was released is 9.4 km AMR, and the AMELIA team completed additional
 2482 processing on the spacecraft data below this point in order to derive the vertical
 2483 profile. Although *Aboudan et al.* (submitted) then corrected some elements in
 2484 this 'noisy' data in an attempt to eliminate the most spurious data points, the
 2485 resulting line still shows considerable variation, which may or may not relate to
 2486 real atmospheric features.

2487 A feature in the EDM data that *is* believed to be a true atmospheric feature
 2488 is a small, positive 'bump' in density followed by an inversion, between 12 and
 2489 10 km AMR, just prior to parachute release; this atmospheric variation was
 2490 corroborated by independent pressure sensors located on the front shield of
 2491 the spacecraft (*Aboudan et al.*, submitted). One possible explanation for this
 2492 feature is the presence of clouds: ice clouds have been observed in equatorial
 2493 and tropical regions throughout the year (e.g. *Pearl et al.*, 2001; *Smith et al.*,
 2494 2003) and modelling experiments indicate that water ice clouds can have a
 2495 large effect on properties of the Martian atmosphere (e.g. *Madeleine et al.*,
 2496 2012; *Steele*, 2014). However, ice clouds at these latitudes would likely dissipate
 2497 during morning hours at this time of year (approaching perihelion), and the
 2498 EDM descended shortly after midsol. An alternative explanation is a detached
 2499 dust cloud/layer, such as has been observed during daylight hours by NASA's

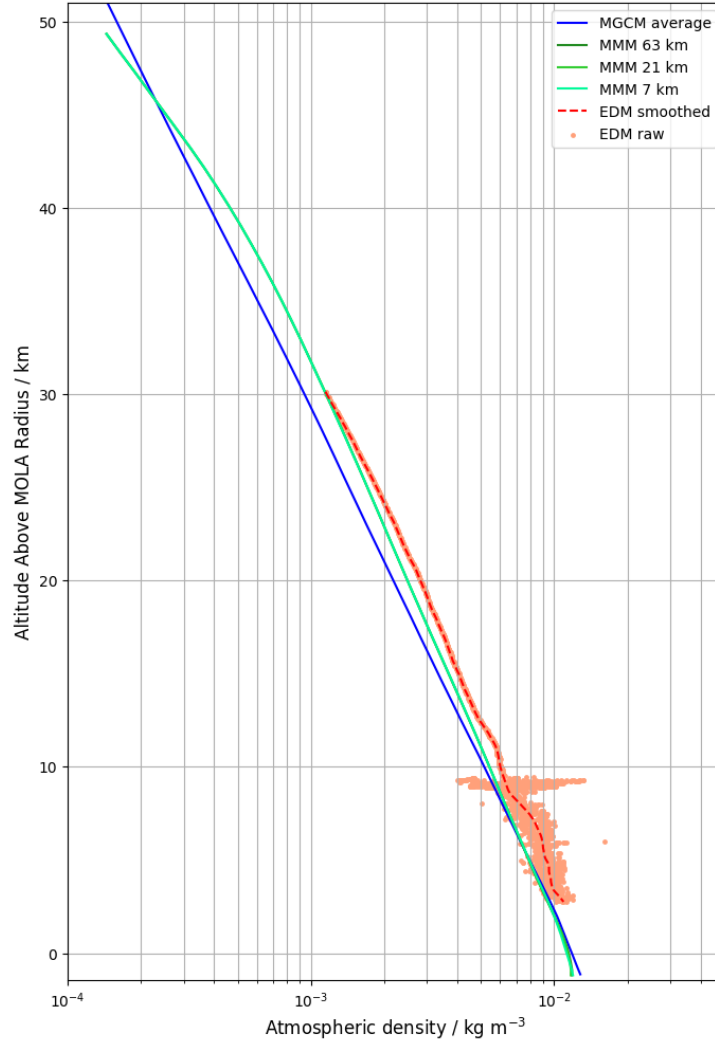


Figure 6.10: Comparison of MGCM, MMM and EDM atmospheric density vertical profiles, through the lower ~ 50 km of the atmosphere.

2500 Phoenix lander (*Komguem et al.*, 2013; *Daerden et al.*, 2015), the Thermal
 2501 Emission Spectrometer (TES) aboard the Mars Global Surveyor (MGS), and
 2502 Mars Climate Sounder (MCS) aboard the Mars Reconnaissance Orbiter (MRO)
 2503 (*Guzewich et al.*, 2013a; *Heavens et al.*, 2014). Neither of these conditions
 2504 would be captured in the current experiments, which do not incorporate ice
 2505 cloud-forming parameterisations nor routines to simulate detached dust layers.
 2506 In particular, simultaneously operating both dust lifting and cloud microphysics

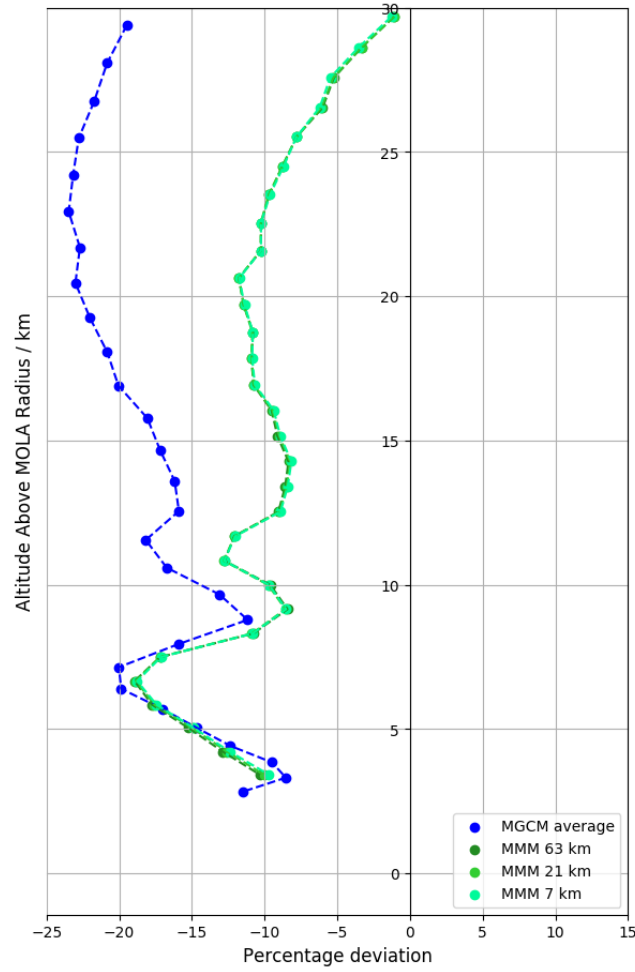


Figure 6.11: Percentage deviation between atmospheric density profiles of modelled data and EDM data, for the lower portion of the atmosphere

submodels in the MGCM and MMM has been largely unsuccessful to date.

Interestingly, NASA's MER Opportunity experienced an atmospheric temperature inversion at a similar height, ~ 10 km AMR, during its descent (*Withers and Smith*, 2006); Opportunity landed in the same geographical region as the EDM, albeit at a later point in the year ($339.1^\circ L_S$). The sister mission, MER Spirit, did not experience such an inversion. There is no definitive explanation for these observations, although *Withers and Smith* (2006) suggest a local dust storm may have had an impact on atmospheric conditions.

2515 In an attempt to gain additional ‘ground truth’ data, temperature obser-
2516 vations from the MCS instrument (*McCleese et al.*, 2007) are shown in Figure
2517 6.12, alongside EDM and MGCM profiles. The comparison between the profiles
2518 must include a caveat: the most appropriate MCS observations have been used
2519 to create this figure (observations taken ~ 30 minutes from the EDM’s descent
2520 time), but the data are not directly aligned geographically with the EDM’s de-
2521 scent trajectory. The MCS profile relates to a latitude of around -5° N but
2522 covers a spread of longitudes, varying between -1.9° E (at 85 km AMR) and
2523 -4.7° E (at 24 km AMR). The MCS temperature data span an altitude of 24-85
2524 km AMR; through most of this height the EDM experienced plasma blackout,
2525 leaving limited overlap between the spacecraft profiles. Indeed, an inversion
2526 occurs in the MCS profile at an altitude of 45-55 km AMR that unfortunately
2527 falls within the EDM plasma blackout (and which does not occur in the MGCM
2528 data). At high altitudes (68-85 km AMR) the MCS and EDM values vary by up
2529 to 15 K, but through the overlap in the lower portion of the profile (30-25 km
2530 AMR) the MCS and EDM data vary by less than 1.5 K. This correlation gives
2531 a measure of validation to the values through at least some of the reconstructed
2532 EDM profile. No other spacecraft have released contemporaneous data suitable
2533 for additional comparisons.

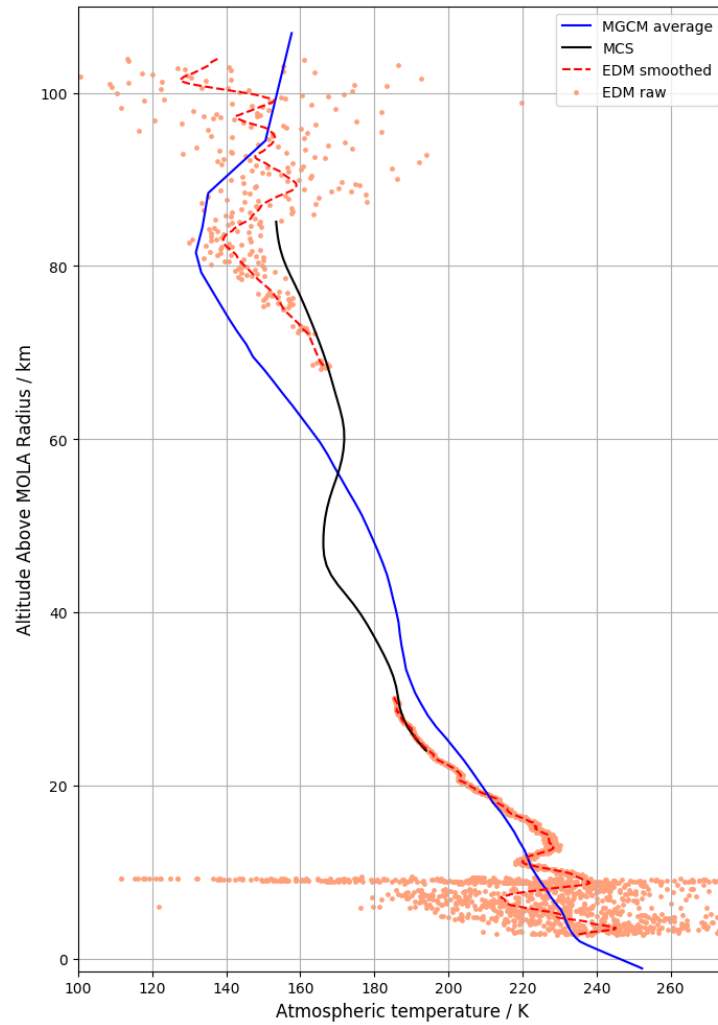


Figure 6.12: Comparison of MGCM and EDM atmospheric temperature vertical profiles, alongside MCS observations obtained from orbit. The MCS data used to create this profile are the closest possible match in time and location to the descent trajectory of the EDM.

It is impossible to verify the raw (or smoothed) EDM atmospheric density data through the final portion of the profile (i.e. below ~ 25 km AMR), and *Aboudan et al.* (submitted) admit that some oscillations in the EDM data are due to “unmodelled dynamics of the parachute-probe system”. Crucially, the AMELIA team used the density profile to calculate both the pressure and temperature profiles: variations in the atmospheric density profile will affect these further calculations. To assess how the inclusion of potentially inaccurate data in these calculations may impact the temperature profile, a ‘proposed mean’ density profile has been derived by fitting a line of regression through the EDM smoothed data spanning 30-12 km AMR and extending this trend down to a height approximately that of the final point in the profile. This new profile is shown in Figure 6.13. When the MGCM and MMM density profiles are compared with this proposed mean profile, the trends identified above are reinforced: with decreasing altitude the deviations of MMM data from EDM data grow and the deviations of MGCM data reduce.

The proposed mean density (ρ) profile is used to recalculate pressure (p) and temperature (T), following *Aboudan et al.* (submitted), by using the hydrostatic equilibrium equation:

$$\frac{\partial p}{\partial z} = -\rho g \quad (6.1)$$

where g is acceleration due to gravity, and the ideal gas equation:

$$T = \frac{pM}{\rho k_B N_A} \quad (6.2)$$

where z is height, M is the mean molar gas of the Martian atmosphere (43.41×10^{-3} kg mol $^{-1}$), k_B is the Boltzmann constant and N_A is the Avogadro constant. The consequent ‘proposed mean’ temperature profile through this portion of the atmosphere is shown in Figure 6.14.

Figure 6.15 shows the percentage deviation of the MGCM and MMM profiles from the EDM smoothed and proposed mean temperature profiles. The MGCM data are a better match to the EDM smoothed profile and to the proposed mean profile.

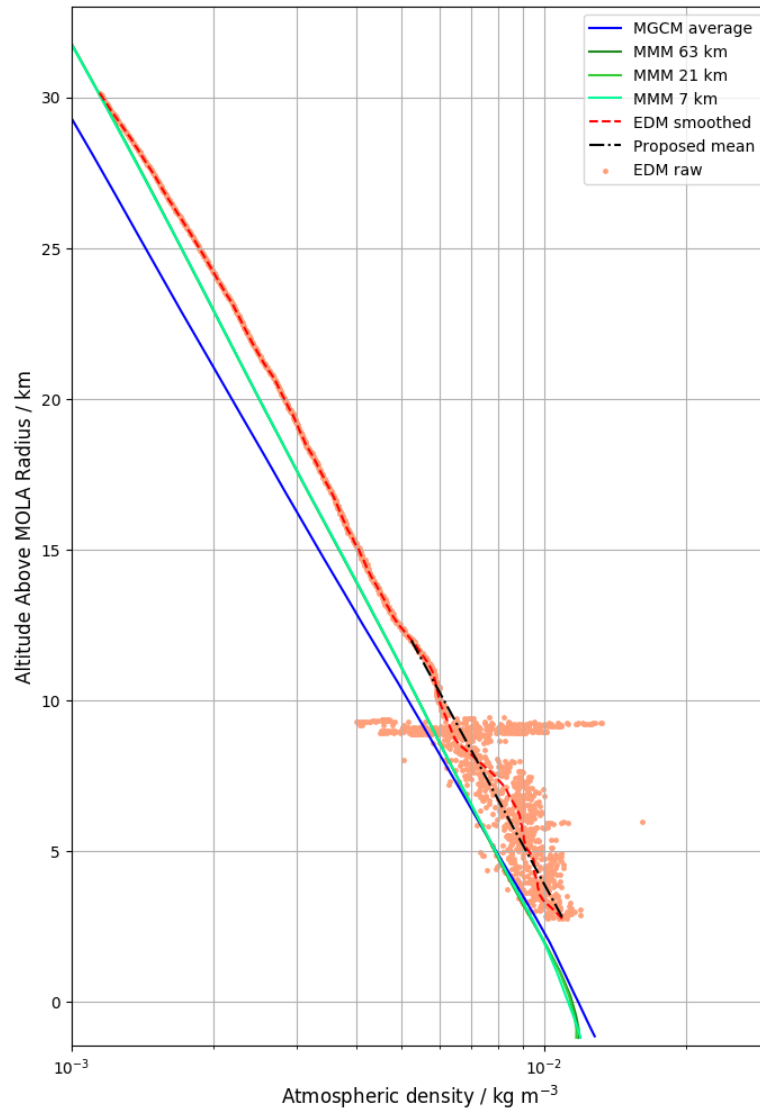


Figure 6.13: As Figure 6.10, for altitudes below ~ 30 km AMR, with the addition of a 'proposed mean' line for the EDM data.

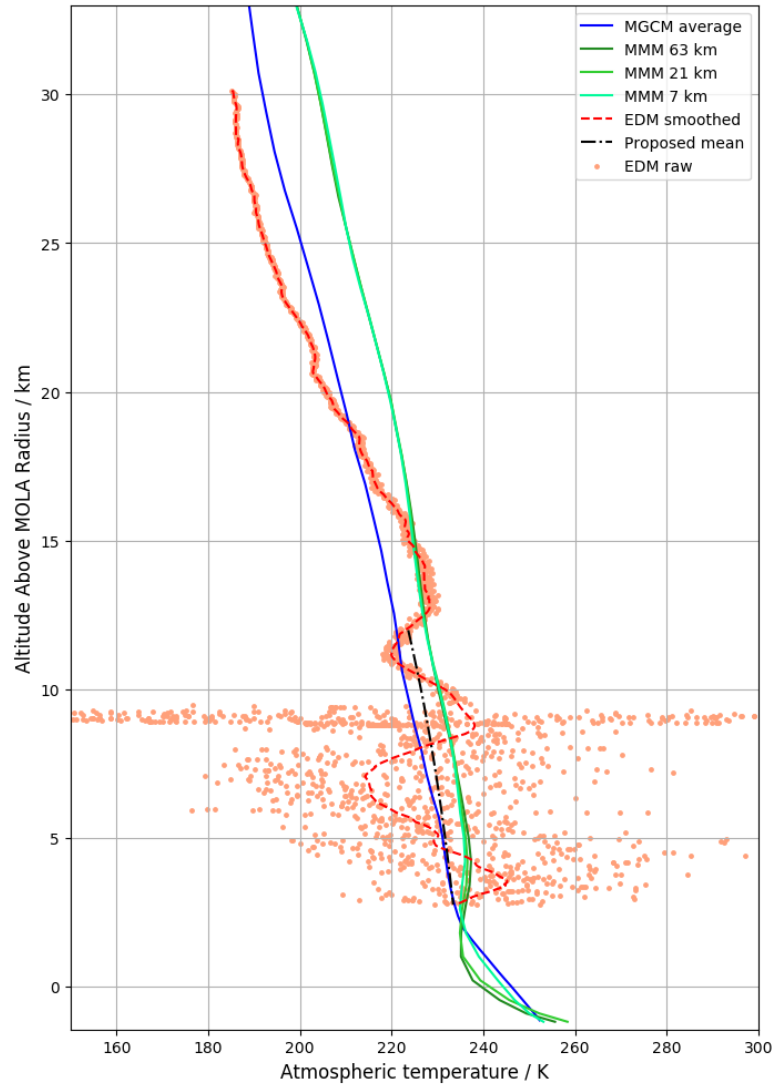


Figure 6.14: Comparison of model and EDM atmospheric temperatures through the lowest ~ 30 km of the profiles, with the addition of a ‘proposed mean’ temperature profile calculated from the proposed mean EDM density profile. (As identified earlier, the three MMM domains overlay each other for most of the height depicted here.)

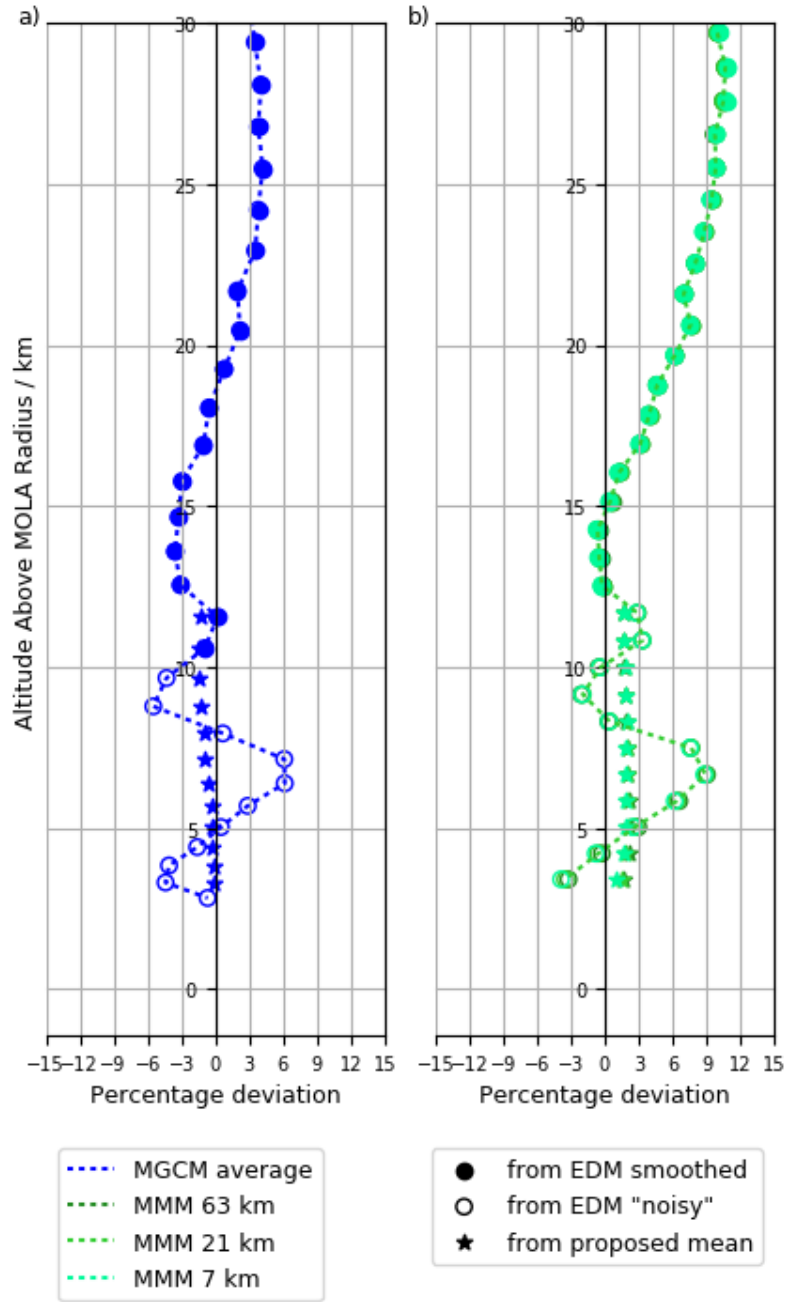


Figure 6.15: Percentage deviation of model data from EDM smoothed and mean/extrapolated temperature profiles: a) MGCM data, b) MMM data. Filled markers relate to model data deviation from EDM smoothed data above parachute release, open markers relate to model data deviation from EDM smoothed data after parachute release; stars relate to model data deviation from proposed mean temperature profile.

Two scenarios are envisaged here:

- That the modelling of the EDM’s motion under parachute, performed by *Aboudan et al.* (submitted), is incomplete, and that the implementation of a complete, corrected model would reduce the apparent variations in density to a smoother profile, potentially closer to that of the ‘proposed mean’ profile. It is anticipated that the MGCM results would display a similar gradient to that of the corrected profile, although would not match the absolute values. The divergence of the MMM results from the EDM smoothed results at lower altitudes suggests that the MMM values would continue to be a poor match to any such corrected profile.
- That the variations in the density profile are indicative of atmospheric features that have not been captured by either of the models.

Both of these scenarios may apply, to varying extents. Any future data releases received from the AMELIA team could be used to assess the veracity of the first scenario; for the second scenario, potential features can be identified. Candidate atmospheric phenomena include local dust features such as a dust cloud, a small dust storm or a dust devil. The presence of a dust cloud or small storm would affect the local atmospheric density and temperature – and could also induce local variations in wind speeds that were not accounted for in the parachute-motion model.

It would seem unlikely that the EDM happened to encounter a dust devil upon its descent into this region (see Section 6.3.3 for discussion of the local dust devil environment), but dust devils with heights of more than 8 km have been observed (*Fisher et al.*, 2005), therefore it is not an impossibility that a dust devil – or a dust-free convective vortex – could have been present at this point in space and time. Measurements of the wind speeds within Martian dust devils are currently very limited, although *Choi and Dundas* (2011) were able to complete a study using images from HiRISE and report dust devil tangential wind speeds of 20-30 m s⁻¹, and large eddy models of Martian convective vortices produce tangential wind speeds of up to 10 m s⁻¹ (*Toigo et al.*, 2003; *Nishizawa et al.*, 2016). (For comparison, peak wind speeds of ~10-20 m s⁻¹ have been recorded within dust devils on Earth, e.g. *Ryan and Carroll* 1970; *Fitzjarrald*

2593 1973; *Schwiesow and Cupp* 1976; *Balme et al.* 2003a.) It is feasible that such
2594 wind speeds could impact the motion of a descending spacecraft, but more
2595 detailed modelling of the specific module and its parachute would be required
2596 for any conclusions to be drawn.

2597 A small dust cloud or storm could be too small for the MGCM to resolve,
2598 and small-scale convective plumes and dust devils are not discretely modelled
2599 by either scale model. MRO Mars Color Imager (MARCI) images of the sols
2600 immediately preceding the EDM's descent show no storms active in the region
2601 (*Malin et al.*, 2016); the instrument has a resolution of a few kilometres per
2602 pixel (*Malin et al.*, 2001). The low likelihood of local dust lifting (see Section
2603 6.3.3) argues against a dust storm forming in this location, but even small
2604 storms can travel some distance; if this were the case, the limited area of the
2605 MMM model potentially precludes such a phenomenon being captured within
2606 the higher resolution experiment.

2607 6.3.2 Wind Speed and Direction

2608 The EDM wind profiles include zonal and meridional wind speeds and the calcu-
 2609 lated magnitude of the resultant wind. These profiles span most of the distance
 2610 through which the EDM was descending by parachute, from 8.4 km AMR down
 2611 to 2.8 km AMR. Figure 6.16 shows the EDM wind speed and magnitude data
 2612 against MGCM and MMM data. The variation between modelled sols can be
 2613 seen in both the MGCM and MMM data. The raw EDM zonal wind data is
 2614 highly variable above ~ 7 km, which is then reflected in the calculated magni-
 2615 tude.

2616 For clarity, Figure 6.17 shows the smoothed EDM winds data alongside the
 2617 average vertical profiles (across multiple sols) for both models. The most obvious
 2618 discrepancy between the modelled and EDM profiles is that the model data do
 2619 not display the ~ 1 km-wavelength oscillation in both zonal and meridional winds
 2620 that is apparent in the EDM profiles.

2621 Comparing the EDM profiles with the MGCM profiles, there is some sim-
 2622 ilarity: zonal winds are generally in the westward direction, averaging around
 2623 8.5 m s^{-1} through the ~ 6 km of altitude available for comparison (8.7 m s^{-1} in
 2624 the EDM data, 8.2 m s^{-1} in the model data); meridional winds are generally
 2625 southward and weaker in nature, averaging 2.4 m s^{-1} in the EDM data and 1.6
 2626 m s^{-1} in the model data. The RMSD between MGCM data and EDM data
 2627 is 5.5 m s^{-1} for the zonal wind speed profiles and 4.6 m s^{-1} for the meridional
 2628 wind speed profiles.

2629 The EDM comparison with the MMM data reveals a poorer match between
 2630 the profiles. The MMM zonal wind profiles are generally westward in nature,
 2631 but peak around 5 m s^{-1} and only average $\sim 3.5 \text{ m s}^{-1}$. The MMM meridional
 2632 wind profiles have an average speed of $\sim 3.9 \text{ m s}^{-1}$, higher than that of the EDM
 2633 profile, and appear to display a directional shift that is the opposite of the shift
 2634 in the EDM data. The RMSD between MMM data and EDM data for the zonal
 2635 wind speed profiles, averaged across the three domain resolutions, is 7.2 m s^{-1} ;
 2636 for the meridional wind speed profiles, averaged across domains, it is 7.9 m s^{-1} .

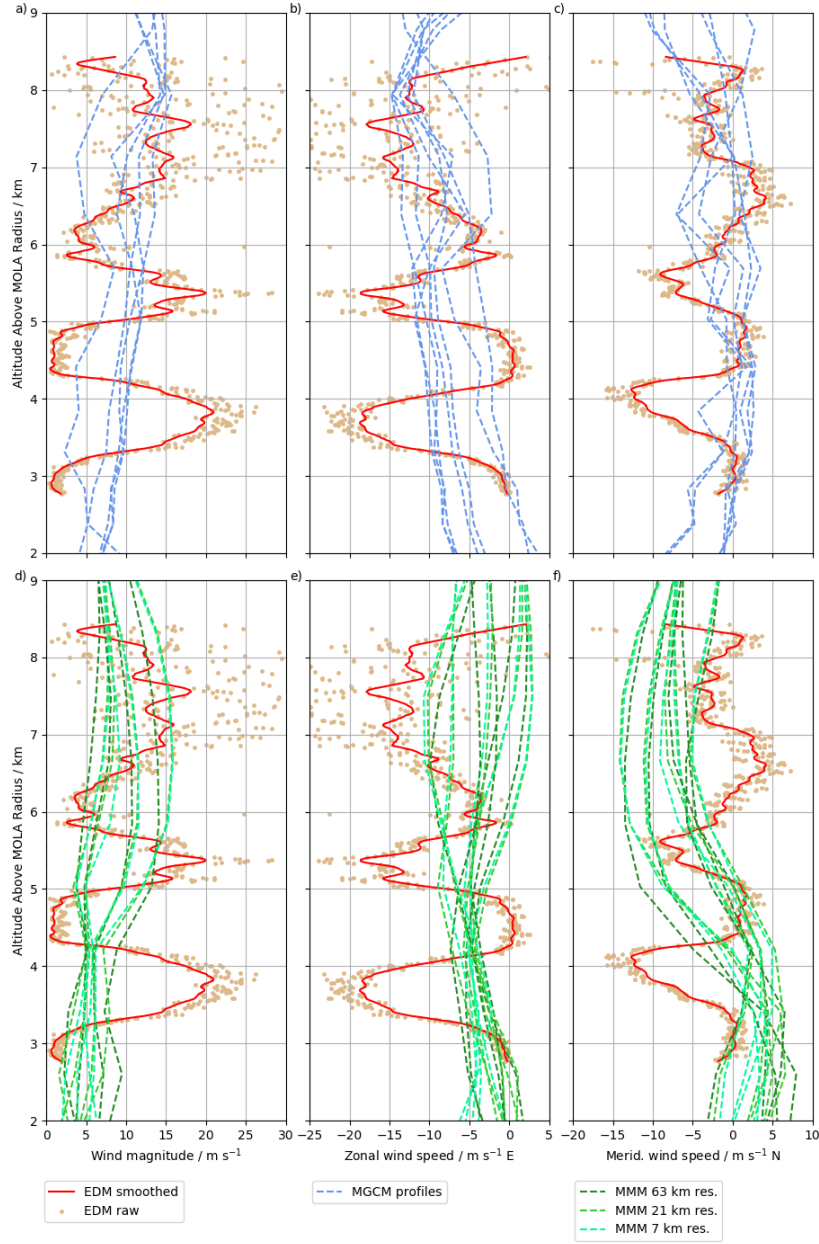


Figure 6.16: Comparison of the EDM raw and smoothed wind data with MGCM profiles (a, b, c) and MMM profiles (d, e, f): the calculated magnitude of the wind (a, d), the zonal wind speed (b, e), and the meridional wind speed (c, f). The dashed lines indicate data from individual model profiles. (Profiles from the three MMM resolution domains all display similar variation through this period.)

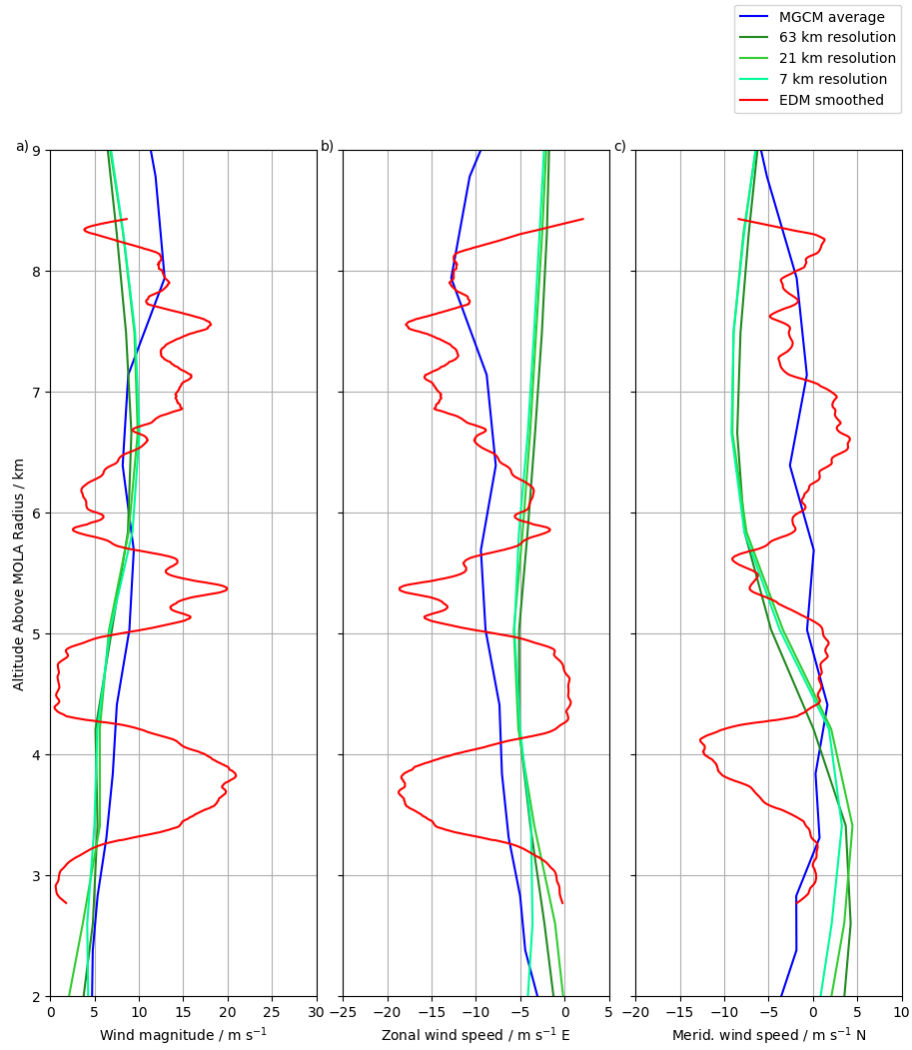


Figure 6.17: MGCM (blue), MMM (green) and EDM (red) vertical profiles of winds: a) wind magnitude, b) zonal wind speed and c) meridional wind speed. (Results from the three MMM resolutions are all plotted, but there is no significant difference between the profiles.)

Figure 6.18 presents wind vector data in a format inspired by the style of a Hovmöller diagram. This plot shows the changing direction of the wind vectors in the EDM, MGCM and MMM data: each arrow is a ‘bird’s-eye view’ of the wind data in a profile at each step in height; the direction of each arrow correlates with the compass points illustrated in the diagram. The top of the diagram relates to data points near the top bound of this portion of the atmosphere (~ 9 km AMR), the bottom relates to the lower bound (~ 3 km AMR). The MGCM displays a continuous west-southwestward wind through this ~ 6 km of altitude, while the MMM profiles describe a clockwise shift in direction from south-southwestward at the top of this vertical range to northwestward at the bottom of the range. This plot displays clearly the changeability of the EDM wind profile; although the southwestward direction is dominant, the wind vectors vary such that the resultant magnitude is a downward, clockwise spiral – an impression of this can be gained from the views shown in Figure 6.19.

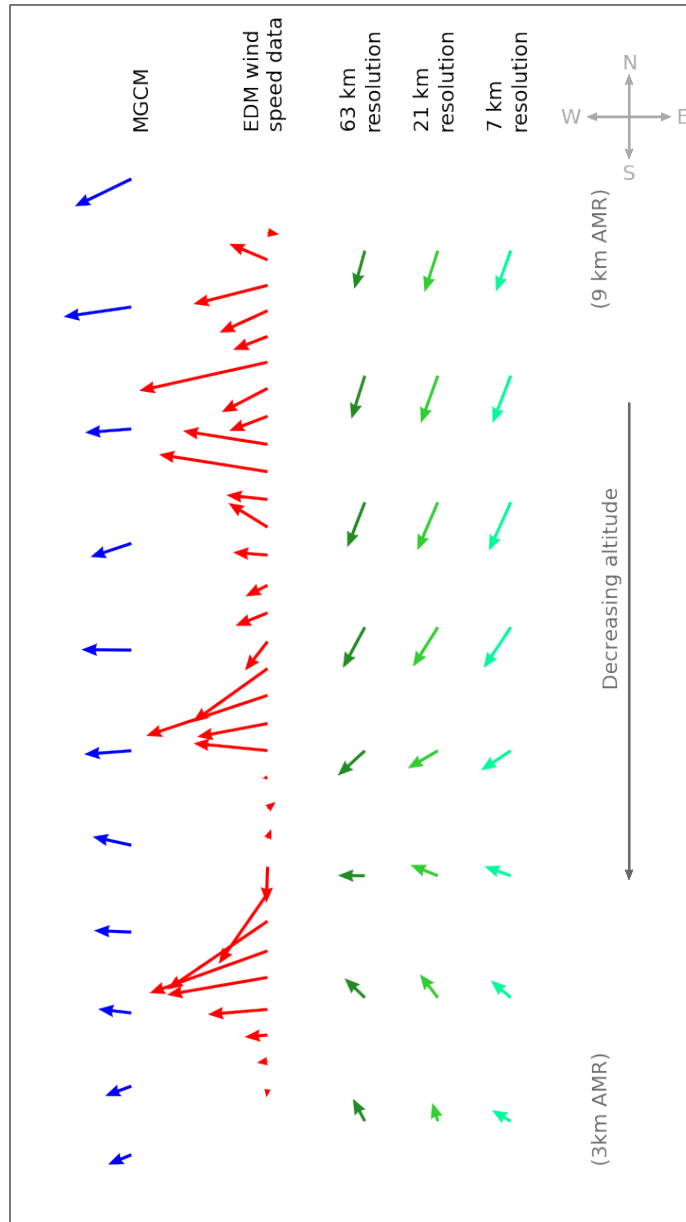


Figure 6.18: Vector plot of the wind profiles discussed herein: MGCM average, EDM data, M3M averages for each resolution. From the top to the bottom of this diagram, altitude decreases. Each arrow is a top-down view of the wind vector at a given height, with the resultant wind direction at that point in the profile correlating with those marked in the compass. For diagrammatic clarity, the EDM data has been sampled every ~ 250 m of altitude rather than attempt to display every value.

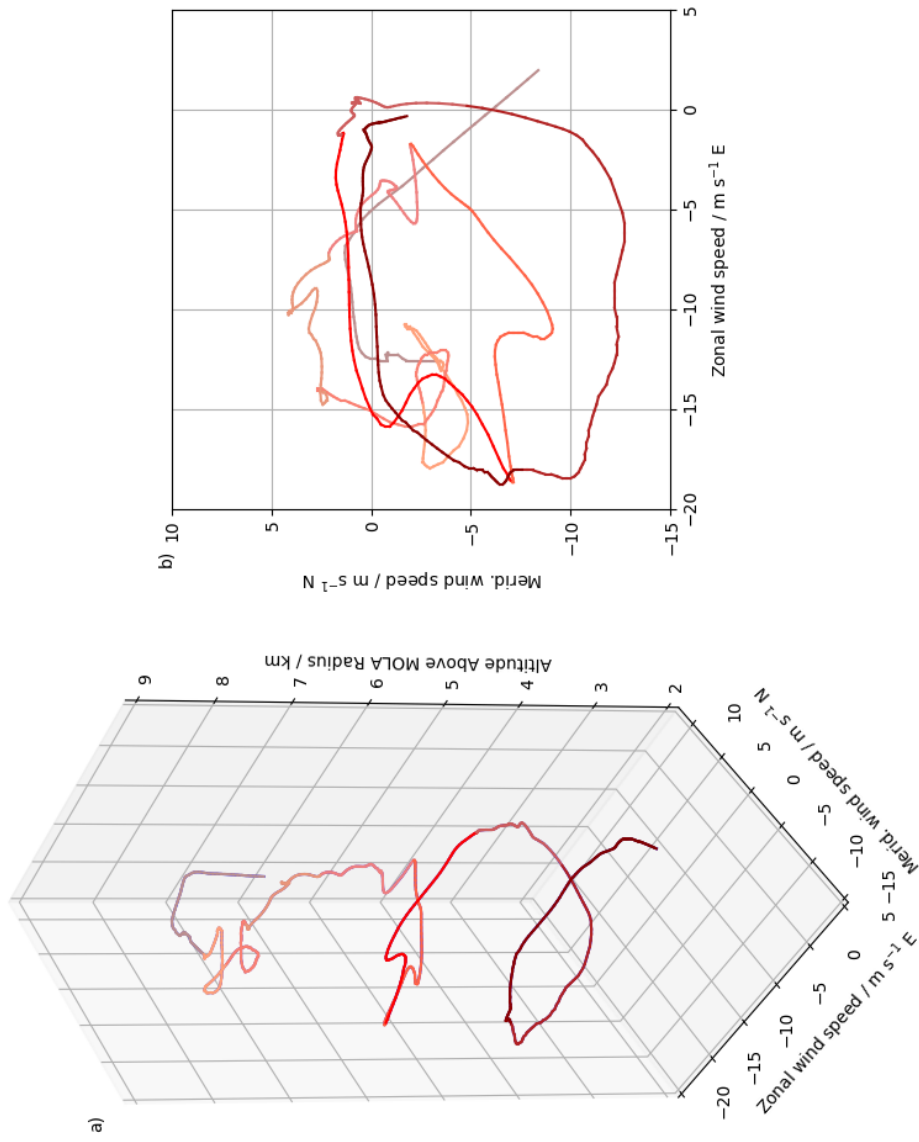


Figure 6.19: EDM smoothed wind magnitude profile data displayed in two views: a) three dimensions, b) from above. The colour variation along the plotted line is added solely to assist in comparison between the views.

2651 To further investigate the directional trends within the EDM data, a rolling
 2652 mean profile² was calculated for each of the zonal, meridional and magnitude
 2653 profiles. Figure 6.20 compares the modelled profiles against this mean profile.

2654 The EDM mean zonal wind profile is westward in nature, varying between
 2655 -13.3 m s^{-1} east and -6.6 m s^{-1} east. The MGCM zonal wind profile is a good
 2656 match to the direction and speed of this mean wind, with a zonal RMSD of 2.6
 2657 m s^{-1} and a meridional RMSD of 3.4 m s^{-1} ; the MMM zonal wind profile is
 2658 a poorer match, with an averaged zonal RMSD of 5.7 m s^{-1} and a meridional
 2659 RMSD of 6.4 m s^{-1} . The EDM mean meridional wind profile shows minimal
 2660 wind around 7 km AMR and then displays a small southward directional shift
 2661 with descending altitude. The MGCM meridional wind profile is a reasonable
 2662 match at this minimum point, but shows lower speeds than the mean for most
 2663 of the profile height, only shifting southwards in direction below 3 km AMR.
 2664 The MMM meridional profile shows a directionality which is the opposite of the
 2665 trend in the EDM mean profile, showing instead a northward directional shift
 2666 around 6 km AMR, although there is a return to a southward direction below
 2667 3 km AMR.

2668 Figure 6.21 shows the EDM smoothed and rolling mean profiles alongside
 2669 the ‘residual’ profile (calculated by subtracting the smoothed profile from the
 2670 mean values). The assumption herein is that the EDM experienced a large-scale
 2671 wind described by the mean profiles (a predominantly southwestward wind) and
 2672 a smaller-scale oscillation that is depicted by this residual profile. This small-
 2673 scale oscillation may be a feature of the EDM’s motion under parachute that was
 2674 not captured by the AMELIA team’s dynamic modelling, or it may be related
 2675 to small-scale atmospheric features that have not been captured by either the
 2676 MGCM or the MMM.

²A 201-point rolling mean was chosen, based on the approximate number of data points through one ‘wavelength’ of the apparent oscillation; 201 data points span approximately 1-1.5 km in height.

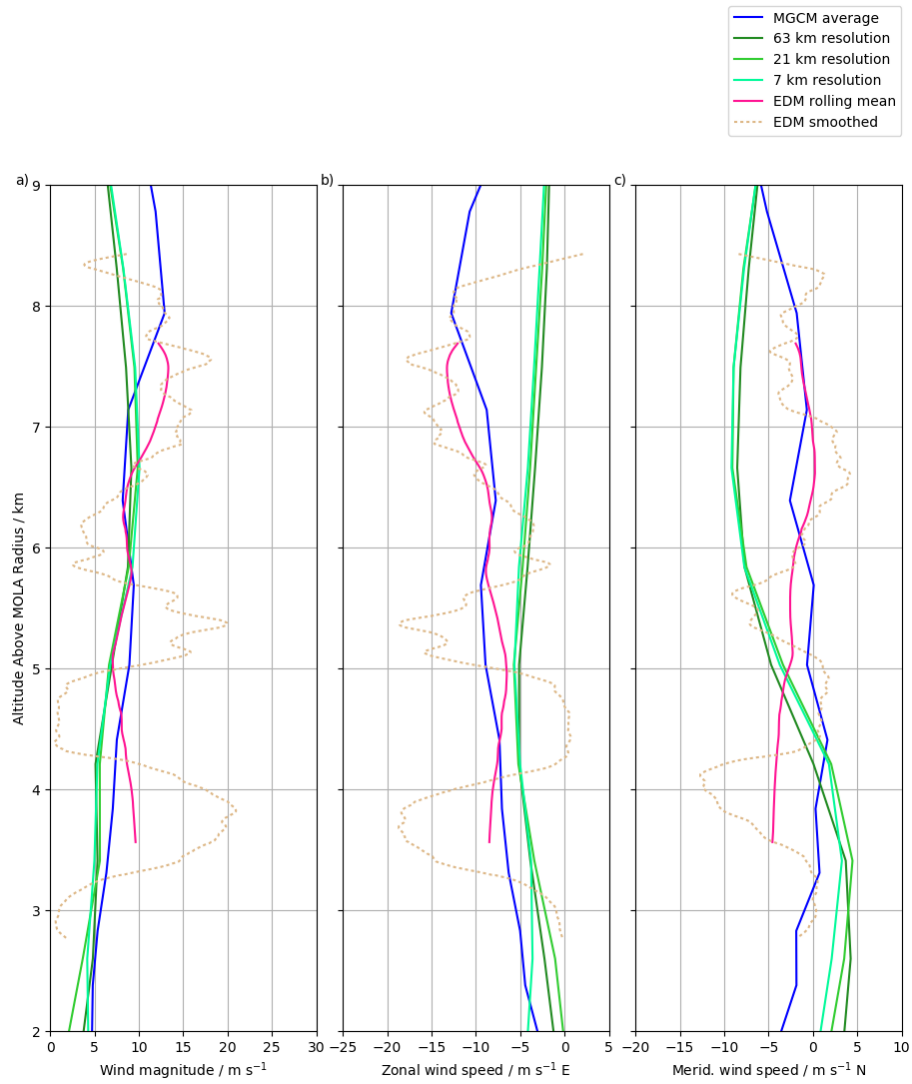


Figure 6.20: As Figure 6.17, with the inclusion of the calculated rolling mean profile.

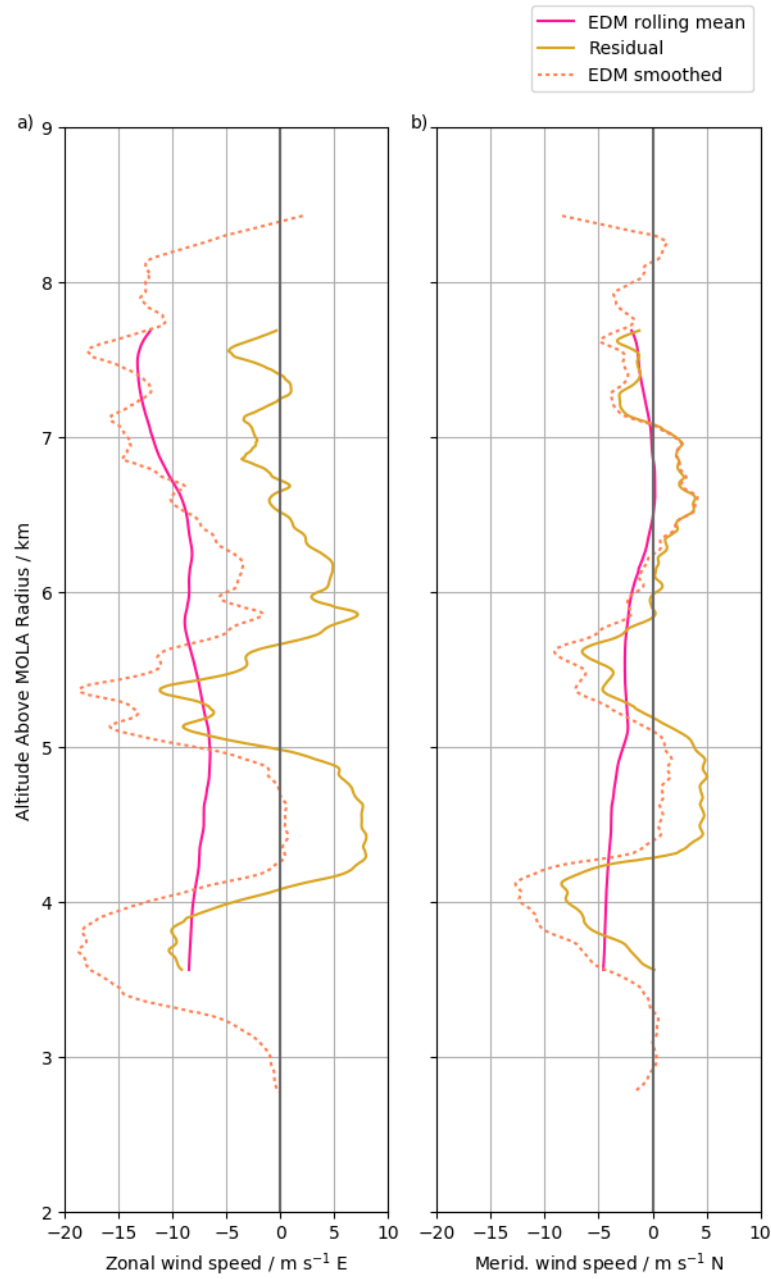


Figure 6.21: EDM smoothed and mean profiles, alongside the calculated residual values: a) zonal wind speeds, b) meridional wind speeds.

2677 A mission suitable for comparison with the ExoMars EDM is that of the twin
 2678 NASA MER spacecraft, which also descended under parachute in equatorial
 2679 locations. Modelling analysis of the MER descents – completed prior to the
 2680 mission – identified that in that case the module-parachute system was sensitive
 2681 to oscillations of wavelengths of ~ 1.5 km or greater (*Kass et al.*, 2003). This
 2682 is a similar wavelength to the apparent oscillation seen in the EDM wind speed
 2683 profiles, and may reveal a sensitivity in this system not incorporated into the
 2684 AMELIA team’s dynamic models. *Aboudan et al.* (submitted) admit that the
 2685 model of the ‘parachute-probe system’ may not be complete, and identify small,
 2686 short-period (1.2 seconds) wind speed oscillations in both zonal and meridional
 2687 data that are caused by parachute dynamics rather than atmospheric features.

2688 If the ~ 1 -km wavelength oscillation does relate to a real feature, one possible
 2689 explanation is a thermal wind – i.e. a horizontal thermal gradient that is affecting
 2690 local wind speeds. While traditional calculations of thermal gradients require
 2691 the area under study to be in geostrophic balance (*Andrews*, 2010), which cannot
 2692 be assumed for this equatorial location, preliminary calculations can be made
 2693 using a generalised thermal wind equation for zonal flow (*White and Staniforth*,
 2694 2008). The results of these calculations suggest that a (meridional) temperature
 2695 gradient capable of driving the sharp changes in zonal wind speed described by
 2696 the apparent spiral seen in Figure 6.19 would have to be of the order of 1 K m^{-1} .
 2697 This is unfeasibly high: MGCM results for this region display temperature
 2698 gradients $\sim 1 \times 10^{-5} \text{ K m}^{-1}$, while MMM result display temperature gradients
 2699 up to $\sim 1 \times 10^{-4} \text{ K m}^{-1}$; temperature gradients of this order are also observed
 2700 on Earth (*Wallace and Hobbs*, 2006). Therefore, if these oscillations in wind
 2701 speed are true features of the environment the EDM encountered, the cause
 2702 must be a local atmospheric phenomenon (potentially associated with a dust
 2703 lifting event) rather than a large-scale wind driven by thermal gradients.

6.3.3 Surface Dust Processes

To explore the likelihood of the EDM encountering a dust event (either a dust storm or dust devil) during its descent, surface dust lifting in the region of the landing site was investigated through modelling and comparison with historical observations. The EDM Schiaparelli carried a meteorological station as part of its science payload; the DREAMS (Dust characterization, Risk assessment and Environment Analyzer on the Martian Surface) experiment would have returned temperature, pressure and wind speed data from the planet’s surface, and it was intended that sand saltation rates and velocities of wind-blown particles would also be investigated (*Esposito et al.*, 2014). Unfortunately, these experiments were not possible, and the comparison here is primarily between MGCM and MMM data, with a brief discussion of surface observations from the Opportunity mission.

As discussed in Chapter 4, MGCM experiments completed at the T31 resolution (5° latitude \times 5° longitude) do not provide a good representation of surface-level processes. The MGCM experiment with the highest combination of horizontal and vertical resolutions is the T85L25 experiment, which provides a horizontal resolution of $\sim 1.875^\circ$ latitude \times $\sim 1.875^\circ$ longitude and uses 25 vertical layers³. Data from this experiment were used as a comparison with the MMM results for the following analysis.

Near-Surface Wind Stress Dust Lifting

When considering surface dust lifting by NSWS, it is the magnitude of the near-surface wind that is important, rather than the direction of that wind. Figure 6.22 shows the magnitude of the near-surface wind at the endpoint of the EDM’s trajectory, for the modelled and EDM data (i.e. the winds in the lowest layer of the model experiments, at ~ 5 m height). For completeness, the full diurnal period has been considered: the MGCM values represent the wind magnitude at this point in every model output $\pm 4^\circ L_S$ from the EDM’s descent date (12 sols in total); the MMM values represent the wind magnitude at this point in

³While T127 and T170 simulations offer higher horizontal resolutions, such simulations must currently be operated with limited vertical resolution, adversely impacting their representation of surface-level processes.

every hour during the modelled five sols. The ‘Potential EDM’ value represents a downward extrapolation of the wind magnitude calculated from the proposed mean zonal and meridional winds.

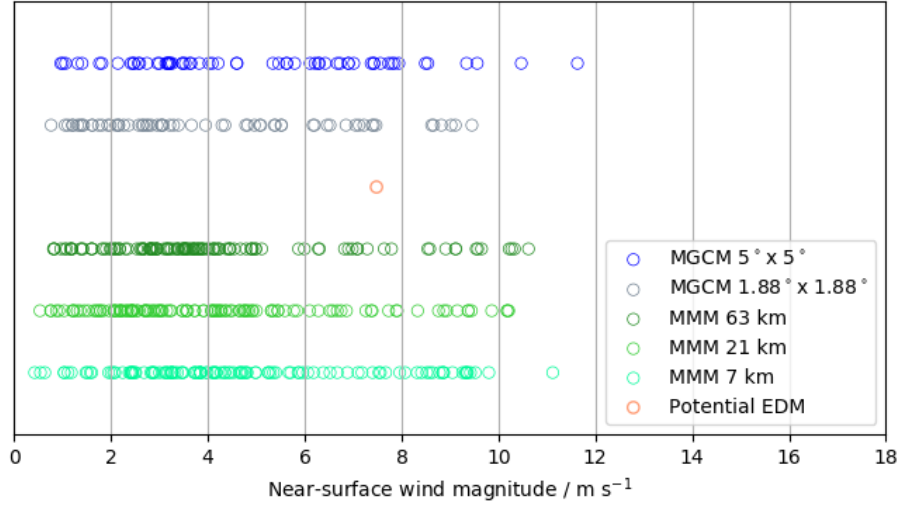


Figure 6.22: Near-surface wind magnitudes at the EDM site through the modelled period. MGCM and MMM markers indicate values for every modelled output. Potential EDM marker indicates a value calculated from extrapolation of the mean EDM winds.

The range of magnitudes shown in Figure 6.22 are similar across MGCM and MMM data: minima of $0.76\text{--}0.96\text{ m s}^{-1}$ (MGCM) and $0.42\text{--}0.81\text{ m s}^{-1}$ (MMM), maxima of $9.45\text{--}11.63\text{ m s}^{-1}$ (MGCM) and $10.21\text{--}11.12\text{ m s}^{-1}$ (MMM). The Potential EDM extrapolated value is within the range of the modelled values, at 7.48 m s^{-1} ; this estimate cannot, unfortunately, be verified by ground truth.

The key point to observe for all these near-surface winds is that they are not forceful enough to lift any dust. In Chapter 4 dust lifting was observed in regions with near-surface wind speeds approaching $\sim 20\text{ m s}^{-1}$. The wind speed required to lift dust will vary slightly geographically, depending on the near-surface atmospheric density, but dust lifting was not predicted to occur in regions experiencing near-surface wind magnitudes of the values shown in Figure 6.22.

The results from the MGCM experiments consequently do not show any NSW dust lifting at the Schiaparelli landing location at any point during the

year, in either the T31 or the T85 resolution. Within the results from the MMM experiments there are small amounts of dust lifting in the surrounding region, although none at the selected landing site. Figure 6.23 shows an example of the patterns of dust lifting seen in the results for the MMM 21 km and 7 km resolution experiments; no NSWS dust lifting occurs in the 63 km resolution experiment. Both panels show data from the same sol and time, $L_S \sim 247^\circ$, around 21:40. All of the modelled NSWS dust lifting in this region occurs during the night, primarily between 19:00 and 01:00, although the 21 km resolution displays some very minor patches of early-morning lifting until 05:00. The local terrain height is also depicted in this figure, showing clearly that the patches of dust lifting are associated with topographical features, e.g. the edge of a small crater (Fig. 6.23b). The module's estimated landing ellipse is drawn in both panels.

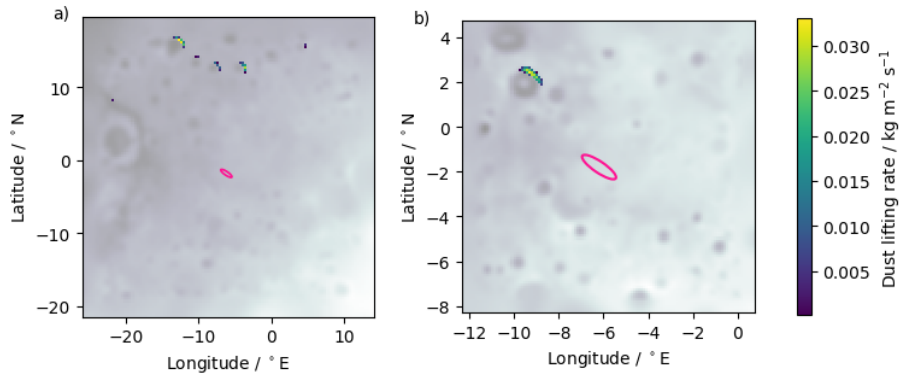


Figure 6.23: NSWS dust lifting in the region surrounding the EDM site as modelled in two MMM resolution domains: a) 21 km, b) 7 km. These results relate to the same point in time: $L_S \sim 247^\circ$, around 21:40. The estimated landing ellipse is drawn in both panels for reference. The underlying terrain height is displayed in monochrome: dark areas are low, bright areas are high (cf. Figure 6.2).

As the EDM did not successfully return any data from the planet's surface, no comparison can be made between observations and model results for near-surface wind magnitudes or dust lifting estimates at this precise location. However, NASA's Opportunity rover is also located in Meridiani Planum: with a landing location of -1.95° N, -5.53° E, it is approximately 50 km from the EDM site. Opportunity does not carry a wind speed sensor, but studies have

investigated surface particle mobility using images returned by the rover. *Sullivan et al.* (2007) identify some movement of surface dust local to Opportunity, but only through the peak of the dust storm season, and then only on patches of ground where surface dust cohesion had already been disturbed by the rover's wheels. *Kinch et al.* (2012) propose a slow, annual deposition-removal dust cycle in Meridiani Planum, suggesting generally limited dust movement in the region. Such observations agree with the near-zero levels of modelled NSWS dust lifting in the vicinity of the EDM site.

Dust Devils

Figure 6.24 shows the rate at which dust is lifted by dust devils at the EDM site, for a period of $\sim 4^\circ L_S$ either side of the module's landing date, across two MGCM resolutions. Figures 6.25 and 6.26 show the maximum dust devil lifting rate modelled in every surface gridbox through the same period. These figures illustrate the relatively low level of MGCM dust devil activity at this location and in the immediate area. The higher resolution experiment shows higher levels of dust devil activity, but the data are within an order of magnitude across the experiments and the absolute values are low relative to other locations across the planet's surface, see Figures 6.25 and 6.26.

Similar dust devil activity is apparent in the MMM results. Figure 6.27 shows examples of the dust devil activity patterns across the different MMM resolutions; all panels in this figure show the same sol and time. In the 63 km resolution experiment there is dust devil activity in the wider region through most daylight hours, but dust devils only occur in the locale of the landing ellipse around 10:40 (shown here). In the 21 km resolution experiment there is dust devil activity in the vicinity of the landing ellipse between 09:40 and 10:40. In the 7 km resolution experiment the highest density of dust devil lifting is also through 09:40-10:40, although more scattered activity occurs in the surrounding region until 14:40. The patterns of dust lifting are not an exact match across MMM and MGCM results, but the geographical distributions and timings are similar: compare panels Fig. 6.25b, Fig. 6.26b, and Fig. 6.27a. The MMM dust devil lifting rate in the vicinity of the EDM ellipse is similar to that seen in the MGCM data: of the order of $1 \mu\text{g m}^{-2} \text{s}^{-1}$.

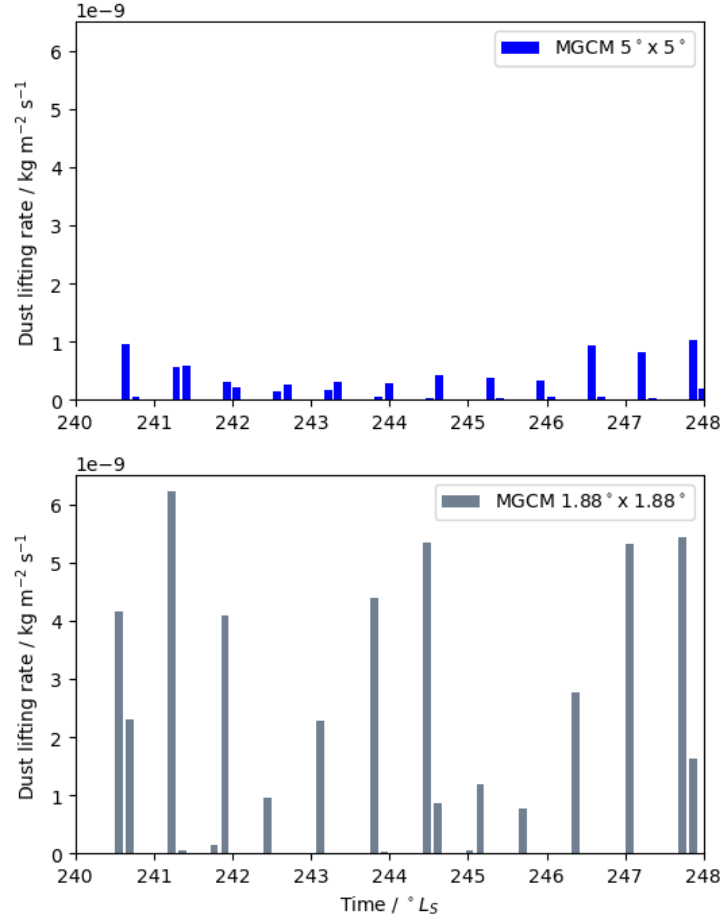


Figure 6.24: Dust devil dust lifting rates at the EDM landing site, as modelled in the MGCM, for $\sim 4^\circ L_S$ either side of the module's landing date, for a) a T31 resolution experiment, and b) a T85 resolution experiment.

2801 Opportunity rover data can again be used as an analogy to assess the accu-
 2802 racy of these model results. While other Mars landers and rovers have directly
 2803 imaged multiple dust devils (e.g. *Ferri et al.*, 2003; *Greeley et al.*, 2006, 2010),
 2804 Opportunity has rarely captured images containing dust devils (*JPL*). In ad-
 2805 dition, studies that have included Meridiani Planum as a target for dust devil
 2806 surveys (e.g. *Cantor et al.*, 2006) have identified the region as exhibiting a low
 2807 number of dust devils. Observations therefore suggest that this region does
 2808 not exhibit a high level of dust devil activity, but that the phenomenon is not
 2809 entirely absent; the model results are consistent with such observations.

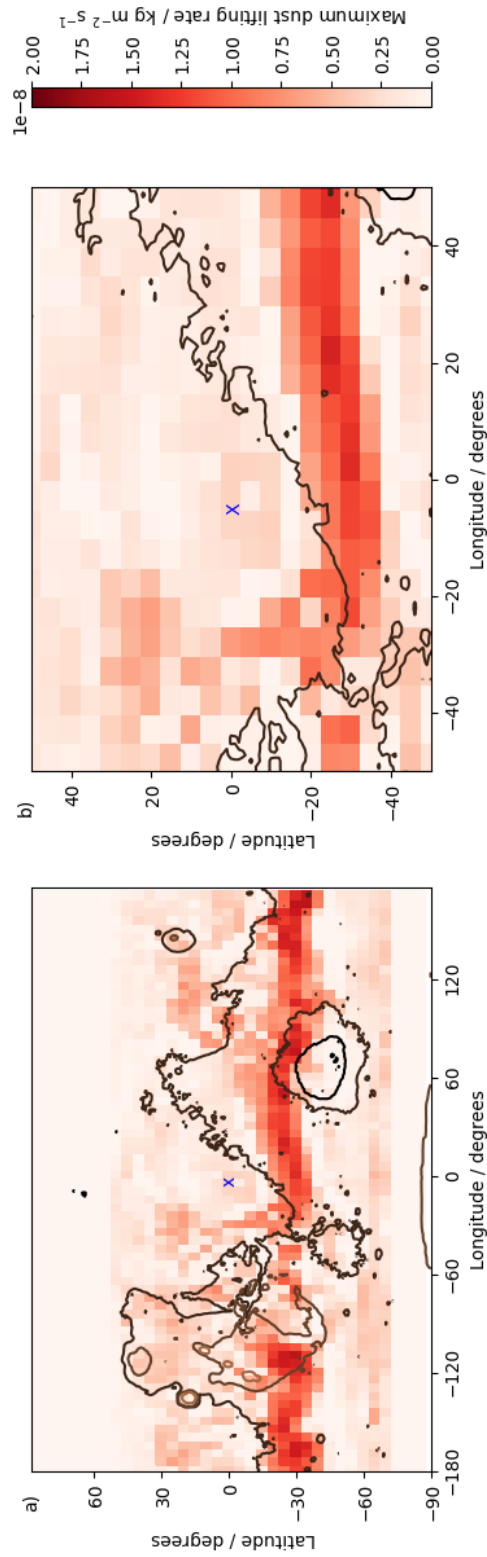


Figure 6.25: Maximum dust devil lifting rates through the period $\sim 4^\circ L_S$ either side of the module's landing date, at the T31 ($5^\circ \times 5^\circ$) resolution: a) every MGC surface gridbox, b) a magnification of the Meridiani Planum region. The location of the Schiaparelli landing site is indicated with a cross.

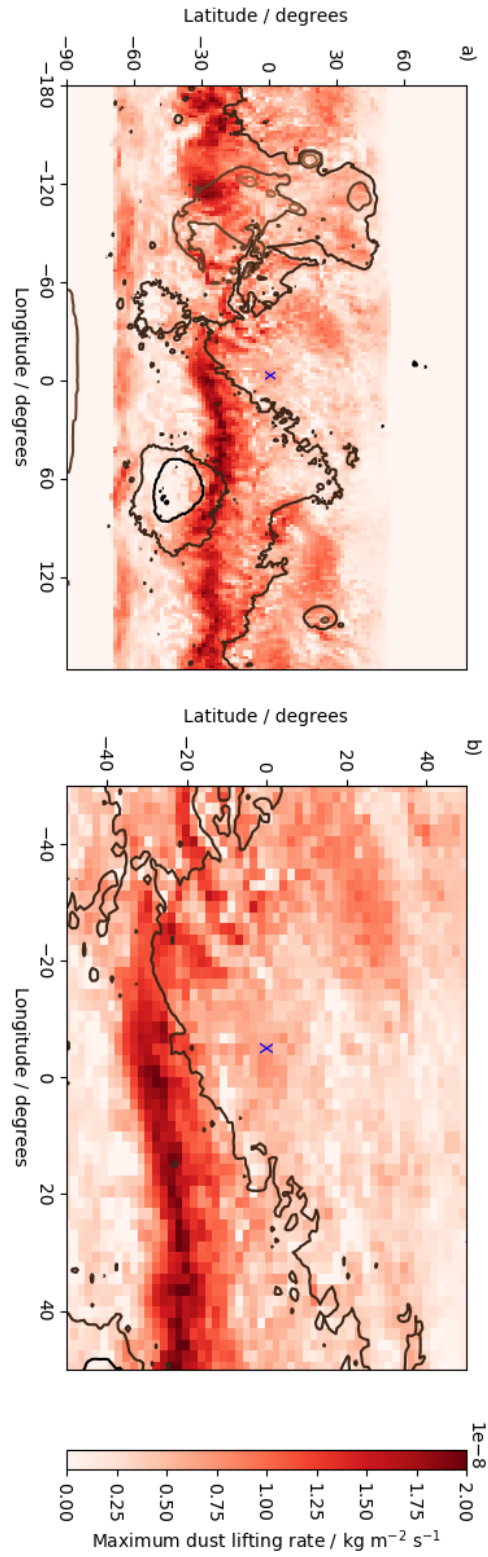


Figure 6.26: As Figure 6.25 for the MGCN experiment modelled at the T85 ($1.875^\circ \times 1.875^\circ$) resolution.

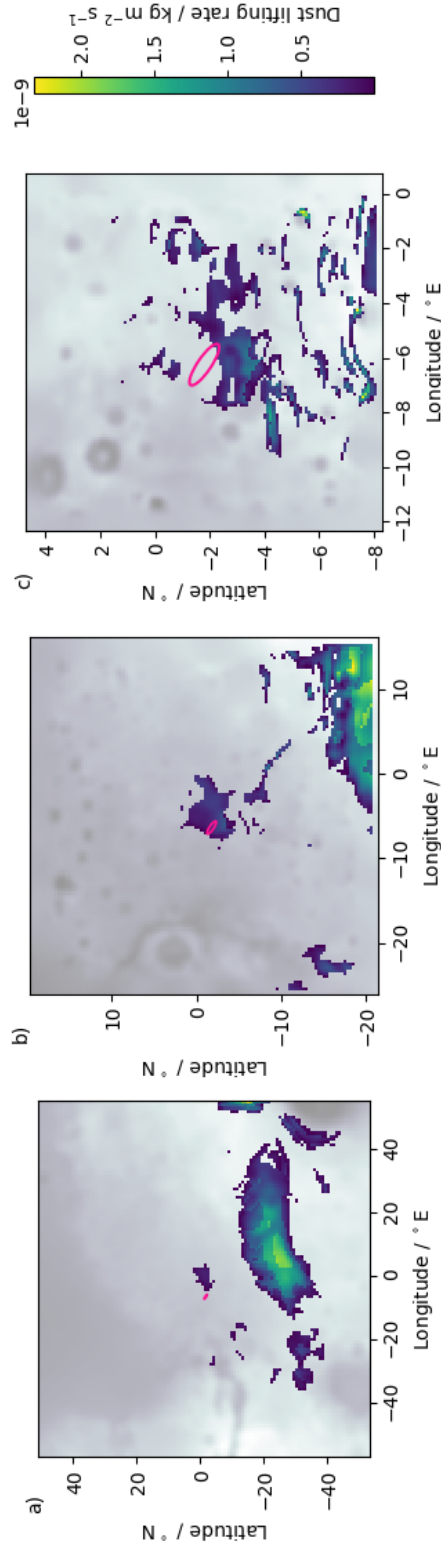


Figure 6.27: As Figure 6.23 for dust lifting by dust devils, in three MMM resolution domains: a) 63 km, b) 21 km, c) 7 km. These results relate to the same point in time: $L_S \sim 247^\circ$, around 10:40. The estimated landing ellipse is drawn in all panels.

2810 6.3.4 Models Comparison

2811 The discrepancies between the atmospheric results achieved from the MGCM
 2812 and the MMM are interesting, as the physics subroutines within the models are
 2813 in general very similar, indeed sometimes identical, and the boundary conditions
 2814 for the MMM experiments were constructed from MGCM results. Despite this,
 2815 the results differ in several instances. The MMM atmospheric density profile
 2816 exhibits values higher than the MGCM profile for much of their comparable
 2817 height. The MMM temperature profile values are also higher than those in the
 2818 MGCM profile, and the MMM data display a minor temperature inversion (~ 1 -
 2819 2 K) below 4 km AMR that is not present in the MGCM profile. Interestingly,
 2820 the MMM 7 km resolution temperature profile deviates from the other MMM
 2821 profiles below ~ 2.5 km AMR, but is a good match for the MGCM profile at
 2822 this near-surface altitude.

2823 The prime explanation for such discrepancies between models is the differ-
 2824 ence in simulation resolution. As discussed in Chapter 4, with reference to
 2825 changing MGCM resolutions, increasing the horizontal resolution of a simula-
 2826 tion allows an improved representation of a planet’s surface properties, such as
 2827 topography, albedo and thermal inertia. The properties of the Martian surface
 2828 have a strong influence on low-altitude atmospheric heating and cooling, and on
 2829 associated local winds (*Peterfreund*, 1981; *Forget et al.*, 2011). It is important
 2830 to model accurate and appropriate surface data in order to facilitate the devel-
 2831 opment of properly representative atmospheric dynamics within the modelled
 2832 region (*Tyler and Barnes*, 2014). Local winds also interact with larger scale
 2833 tides, and thus local variability can propagate to larger scales. Atmospheric cir-
 2834 culations of a length that can only be resolved in the mesoscale will be missed
 2835 in global simulations (*Tyler and Barnes*, 2014), and so their larger-scale impact
 2836 will not be incorporated in global-scale results.

2837 The MMM experiments use maps of Martian surface properties derived from
 2838 observations made by instruments aboard the MGS spacecraft: MOLA topog-
 2839 raphy and TES albedo and thermal inertia data. At the equatorial landing site,
 2840 the resolutions of these data are: ~ 1.4 km for topography (*Smith et al.*, 2001),
 2841 ~ 7.4 km for albedo and ~ 3.0 km for thermal inertia (*Christensen et al.*, 2001).

2842 The surface properties used within MGCM simulations are also based on MOLA
 2843 and TES data, but are calculated from a dataset with a resolution of 1 pixel
 2844 per degree (a maximum length of 59.3 km), which is then scaled to match the
 2845 selected horizontal resolution of the experiment; this results in a grid spacing of
 2846 ~ 296 km at the landing site – a much poorer resolution than the surface in the
 2847 MMM experiments (at 63 km, 21 km and 7 km).

2848 While this discussion intimates that the higher resolution of a mesoscale
 2849 model will always produce results that improve on the results obtained with a
 2850 global-scale model, it is more accurate to state that simulations performed at
 2851 the mesoscale are always expected to diverge slightly from those performed at a
 2852 global scale. That divergence is often observed to be improvement, particularly
 2853 when the modelled region involves highly varying topography such as chasms
 2854 (*Spiga and Forget, 2009*), craters (*Rafkin et al., 2016*) and mountains (*Spiga*
 2855 *et al., 2011*). However, *Tyler and Barnes (2014)* highlight the fact that, for
 2856 certain locations, some Martian mesoscale models require an element of tuning
 2857 to best represent the climate and weather patterns of a particular time of year.

2858 Another possible explanation for the divergence between models is that they
 2859 operate different dynamical cores. The MMM implements the LMD MGCM
 2860 physics subroutines alongside an adaptation of the dynamical core of the NCAR
 2861 AR-WRF (*Skamarock and Klemp, 2008; Spiga and Forget, 2009*), while the
 2862 MGCM operates the same physics subroutines alongside the spectral core of
 2863 the UK AOPP (Atmospheric, Oceanic and Planetary Physics department, Ox-
 2864 ford) (*Hoskins and Simmons, 1975; Forget et al., 1999*). *Tyler et al. (2002)*
 2865 compared the performance of Martian global and mesoscale models and iden-
 2866 tified the different dynamical cores between the models as a potential cause of
 2867 differences in the results; *Held and Suarez (1994)* even found some discrepan-
 2868 cies in results achieved using two global models with different dynamical cores.
 2869 Detailed investigations would be required to explore this topic, forming the core
 2870 of a substantial future research project.

2871 In contrast to the between-model variations seen in the atmospheric profiles,
 2872 the comparison of MGCM and MMM surface dust lifting processes shows rea-
 2873 sonable agreement between the models. Experimental results from both models
 2874 display near-surface wind speeds at the EDM site that are within a similar range,

2875 with maxima around 11 m s^{-1} , and are below the speeds that could be expected
2876 to lift dust. Modelled dust devil activity is low through this period in both mod-
2877 els. It should be noted that these near-surface MGCM results were obtained at
2878 a higher resolution than the atmospheric MGCM results, $\sim 1.88^\circ$, resulting in
2879 a gridsize of $\sim 111 \text{ km}$ at the landing site, suggesting that the closer agreement
2880 between the models in these near-surface tests is related to the improvement in
2881 MGCM resolution.

2882 All the experiments performed herein were completed under the assumption
2883 of hydrostatic equilibrium. While this is applicable at MGCM resolutions of
2884 hundreds of kilometres, it is possible for very high resolution mesoscale simu-
2885 lations to reach scales at which the hydrostatic assumption is no longer valid
2886 (*Spiga, 2014*). However, this will not greatly impact results until the mod-
2887 elled horizontal scale approaches that of the vertical length of any small-scale
2888 dynamic motions (*Tyler et al., 2002*). As the smallest horizontal scale in the
2889 MMM experiments completed herein is 7 km , it is expected that an assumption
2890 of hydrostatic equilibrium will not adversely impact the performance of the sim-
2891 ulation. In addition, for the version of the MMM that was available for these
2892 experiments it was recommended that the model be operated in hydrostatic
2893 mode to maintain stability – this is particularly the case for nested simulations
2894 – and the non-hydrostatic mode has not been tested with the incorporation of
2895 the dust lifting routines used herein. The author has not yet achieved success-
2896 ful nested, non-hydrostatic MMM experiments involving dust lifting, but this
2897 aspect of the MMM’s performance would be an interesting subject for future
2898 work.

2899 **6.4 Summary**

2900 This case study of the EDM Schiaparelli landing site has focused on the lower
 2901 portion of the atmosphere, comparing MGCM and MMM experimental results
 2902 with the EDM profiles of atmospheric density, temperature and wind speeds
 2903 through the available altitudes. The density and temperature profiles were
 2904 compared through the portion of the atmosphere below the plasma blackout
 2905 until the final data point: 30 to 2.76 km AMR. The wind speed profiles were
 2906 compared only below 8.4 km AMR.

2907 While MMM atmospheric density values are a closer match to the EDM data
 2908 than MGCM values, for the portion of the descent from 30 to ~ 9 km AMR, the
 2909 percentage deviation in the comparison of MMM and EDM data increases with
 2910 descent. In contrast, the percentage deviation in the comparison of MGCM and
 2911 EDM data reduces with descent.

2912 The variation in the EDM atmospheric density data below the height at
 2913 which the parachute was opened (9.4 km AMR) could be the result of incomplete
 2914 dynamic modelling through this portion of the descent. To assess how the
 2915 potential inclusion of inaccurate data may have impacted forward calculations
 2916 of atmospheric pressure and temperature, a proposed mean density profile was
 2917 derived and then used to recalculate those quantities. The MGCM atmospheric
 2918 temperature profile is a better match than the MMM results to both the EDM
 2919 smoothed profile and to the proposed mean profile.

2920 The EDM zonal and meridional wind speed profiles span most of the EDM's
 2921 parachute descent, 8.4 to 2.8 km AMR. The EDM data exhibit an oscillation that
 2922 is not present in the results from either model, and calculation of the resultant
 2923 wind magnitude shows that the EDM wind vector describes a descending spiral.
 2924 To explore this aspect of the data, mean wind speed profiles were calculated for
 2925 both the zonal and meridional data. Comparing the modelled data against both
 2926 the EDM smoothed and proposed mean profiles, the MGCM is a better match
 2927 than the MMM to the direction and speeds in the EDM profiles.

2928 The divergence between the results obtained from the global- and mesoscale
 2929 models is primarily due to the difference in experiment resolution. Higher res-
 2930 olution simulations allow a better representation of the small-scale variation in

surface properties such as topography, albedo and thermal inertia, which in turn affects small and larger scale fluctuations in temperature, density and wind. A higher resolution experiment will also capture smaller-scale atmospheric circulations that are missed in global-scale models. Thus, although the physical subroutines used across both scales of model are similar, the weather and climate patterns within the models can diverge. In previous Martian mesoscale studies this divergence has tended to result in an improvement over global-scale results, but the experiments completed within this case study suggest that this is not necessarily the result for every region.

The variation in the EDM atmospheric density and wind speed profiles may be evidence of true atmospheric features – for example, the density/temperature inversion in the EDM data at a height of ~ 10 km AMR is believed to be a true feature – or may be artefacts of an incomplete parachute-motion model. This feature, and the variation in the final few kilometres of the descent, could be related to local atmospheric phenomena such as a small dust storm or dust cloud, or a convective vortex. Such phenomena could affect the local atmospheric temperature and density, and may provoke changes in small-scale wind patterns and speeds. These phenomena could be of a scale that is too small to be resolved by the MGCM or the MMM.

To explore the likelihood of the descending spacecraft encountering a dust event, modelled dust lifting within the region was investigated. A comparison of MGCM and MMM surface dust lifting processes shows reasonable agreement between the models through a period spanning the time of the EDM's descent. Results at the EDM site from both models show near-surface wind speeds that are of a similar range, and none of the experiments exhibited wind speeds high enough to lift dust at this location. Minor amounts of NSW dust lifting occur in the region within the MMM model, at points associated with topographical variation. Modelled dust devil activity in the vicinity of the EDM site is low through this period in both of the models. The low levels of NSW and dust devil lifting within the region encompassing the EDM site agree with observations of the area made by NASA's Opportunity rover.

The predicted low level of NSW dust lifting at this site does not, in itself, preclude the existence of a small dust storm or cloud in the vicinity during the

EDM's descent, as the phenomena could have formed elsewhere and travelled through the region at the right time. The same is true of dust devils and convective vortices.

6.4.1 Recommendations

Through the lower portion of the EDM trajectory, the MGCM is able to provide a good ($\pm 5\%$ deviation) prediction of the proposed mean atmospheric temperature profile encountered by the spacecraft, and to generally match the direction and speed of the proposed mean wind field (RMSD of less than 3.5 m s^{-1} both zonally and meridionally) through the lowest $\sim 9 \text{ km}$ of the descent. The MGCM should be used with confidence when predicting the large-scale atmospheric properties and circulations associated with future landing sites that are similar in topography and latitude to that of the ExoMars EDM.

The MMM as a model is not as mature as the MGCM. This investigation suggests that, in certain circumstances, MGCM simulations of mission entry and descent profiles are able to provide information that is of equal or greater accuracy than that produced by higher resolution MMM simulations. Since it is the case that a baseline MGCM simulation must be completed in order to generate the initial and boundary conditions for any MMM simulation, anyone planning future work on this topic should consider this finding when planning global and mesoscale modelling. It may be the case that spending a large portion of the planned modelling time completing a comprehensive set of high resolution global experiments, and then only modelling very local, short-term situations in the mesoscale, is a better use of time than a quick adoption of a mesoscale modelling regime.

That is not to assert that mesoscale experiments do not have their place, and such complex, high resolution simulations are indeed required when investigating certain aspects of the Martian atmosphere, such as detached dust layers (*Spiga et al.*, 2013), polar jets (*Toigo et al.*, 2012), crater circulations (*Tyler and Barnes*, 2015; *Rafkin et al.*, 2016; *Steele et al.*, 2017, 2018), polar water-ice cap edge sublimation (*Tyler and Barnes*, 2014), and water-ice clouds (*Michaels et al.*, 2006). It is also true that the more detailed representation of surface-level dust lifting processes that is possible within mesoscale results

2996 is important in this particular avenue of study. However, for wide, relatively
2997 flat, equatorial landing locations – such as those often chosen historically for
2998 Mars surface missions – global scale modelling can provide atmospheric vertical
2999 profile information that is at least as accurate as mesoscale modelling.

3000 With regard to surface dust lifting processes, it is difficult to fully assess
3001 the accuracy of the model results without ground truth data. However, MGCM
3002 and MMM results are consistent in their estimations of near-surface winds –
3003 and consequent NSWS dust lifting rates – and with respect to dust devil lifting
3004 rates, and these results are consistent with the limited ground-based and orbital
3005 observational data on this topic. As this work is unique in comparing the
3006 results of MMM surface dust lifting experiments against MGCM experiments
3007 for terrain of this type, this consistency across the different scale models is
3008 a positive outcome, indicating that the MMM dust cycle parameterisation is
3009 suitable for use in future research.

Chapter 7

Summary and Conclusions

This thesis set out to answer three research questions:

1. Does the model exhibit an accurate geographical representation of dust lifting, and is this representation robust?
2. Can the temporal variability of Martian dust lifting be deduced by comparison with terrestrial processes?
3. Is the model's prediction of the atmospheric and near-surface environment at a selected landing site accurate enough to aid mission planning?

This chapter summarises the work completed within this research and answers the questions with recommendations for the implementation of dust lifting processes within atmospheric models. This thesis concludes with suggestions for future work.

7.1 Overview of Research

To investigate the research questions three research themes were developed:

- Geographical representation of dust lifting
- Temporal representation of dust lifting
- Landing site case study

3028 7.1.1 Geographical Representation of Dust Lifting

3029 This work found that increasing the resolution of a Mars Global Circulation
 3030 Model (MGCM) experiment, either horizontally or vertically, resulted in more
 3031 geographically widespread lifting of dust by near-surface wind stress (NSWS).
 3032 Few prior studies had considered how dust lifting parameterisations are affected
 3033 by changes in model resolution. The increase in dust lifting with increased hor-
 3034 izontal resolution was anticipated; the increased lifting with increased vertical
 3035 resolution was not anticipated, and is believed to be an area not yet given proper
 3036 consideration by the atmospheric modelling community.

3037 Higher horizontal resolution experiments resulted in more geographically
 3038 widespread dust lifting, as well as more dust lifting in total. The association
 3039 between NSWS dust lifting and dust storm formation (e.g. *Kahn et al.*, 1992;
 3040 *Strausberg et al.*, 2005; *Wang and Richardson*, 2015) allowed comparison of the
 3041 results of these experiments with observations of storm forming regions, as dust
 3042 must be lifted in order for storms to form. The higher resolution simulations pro-
 3043 duced a better geographical representation of the observed dust lifting regions,
 3044 such as important storm-forming regions in the northern hemisphere during the
 3045 approach to perihelion, and in regions along the edge of the southern hemisphere
 3046 polar cap.

3047 The total amount of dust lifted globally by the horizontal-resolution experi-
 3048 ments increased with increasing resolution, displaying an asymptotic trend: the
 3049 geographical distribution of dust lifting altered more noticeably between lower
 3050 resolution experiments (T31 to T42) than between higher resolutions (T63 to
 3051 T85). Very high resolution experiments were completed (T127 and T170), the
 3052 results of which are tentatively used to support the identified trend, but these
 3053 experiments are only considered preliminary tests due to model limitations at
 3054 such high horizontal resolutions.

3055 Increasing the model’s vertical resolution also resulted in an improved geo-
 3056 graphical representation of dust lifting. As with the increasing horizontal res-
 3057 olution experiments, the areas within which more dust is lifted are generally
 3058 associated with seasonal polar cap edges, although there are not as many ‘new’
 3059 dust lifting regions as were seen with horizontal change. These results were

not anticipated prior to these experiments. Within the field of Martian global atmospheric modelling, consideration has been given to how many vertical layers are required to best represent thermal tides (*Wilson and Hamilton, 1996*) and Hadley circulation (*Wilson, 1997*), but there is no published literature on the impact that changing model vertical resolution may have on surface-level processes.

This investigation found that near-surface peak wind speeds are larger in the higher vertical resolution experiments than at lower resolutions, consequently increasing NSW dust lifting. A possible cause of this is the vertically-narrow features identified in some peak wind speed vertical profiles. These high peak wind speed features may be atmospheric perturbations that occur across relatively narrow vertical distances: they cannot be resolved at the lowest vertical resolutions, and therefore are not represented in those results.

7.1.2 Temporal Representation of Dust Lifting

This investigation found that dust devil activity within MGCM simulations displays a wider diurnal range than was anticipated, and that many regions actually display a peak in dust devil activity before mid-sol. Prior to this work there had been no published studies exploring this aspect of Martian dust devil behaviour: it was generally assumed that Martian dust devils would be most active during afternoon hours, as is the case on Earth (e.g. *Sinclair, 1969; Snow and McClelland, 1990; Lorenz and Lanagan, 2014*). Two possible explanations for this Martian dust devil behaviour are proposed:

- the dust devil parameterisation in use within MGCMs does not provide a good representation of the diurnal behaviour of Martian dust devils;
- the accepted description of dust devils on Mars is not complete.

The comparison of model results with published studies of observations of Martian dust devils suggests that the MGCM dust devil parameterisation *does* provide a good representation of Martian dust devil activity throughout the sol. Across the seven comparisons made with the published studies, three show a good match between modelled results and observations, three show a partial match, and one shows a minimal match. All of the comparison studies report

3091 observations of dust devils (or pressure vortices) during morning hours. The
 3092 observed maximum in dust devil activity is usually after mid-sol, but the timing
 3093 of that peak varies across the studies.

3094 Given that this parameterisation is a good representation of dust devils, it
 3095 is therefore proposed that the generally accepted description of dust devil be-
 3096 haviour on Mars is incomplete. Martian dust devil activity does not necessarily
 3097 peak in the early afternoon across all regions, and local wind speeds may act
 3098 as a strong governor of the timings of dust devils. Parameterised dust devil
 3099 activity depends upon the sensible heat available to the dust devil and its ther-
 3100 modynamic efficiency. Most of the parameters involved in calculating both of
 3101 these quantities follow predictable diurnal patterns that peak in mid-afternoon
 3102 (including surface temperature), with the exception being the near-surface wind
 3103 speed. It is the variability within the near-surface wind speed that introduces
 3104 variability into the diurnal timings of dust devils.

3105 7.1.3 Landing Site Case Study

3106 This case study found that, for certain landing locations on Mars, the global-
 3107 scale MGCM performs as well as the higher resolution Mars Mesoscale Model
 3108 (MMM), with regard to predictions of atmospheric conditions the lander will
 3109 encounter. Prior to these experiments it was expected that the mesoscale re-
 3110 sults would depict more accurately a lander’s descent environment. Previous
 3111 comparisons of results from different scale models have often focused on areas
 3112 featuring large variations in local terrain (e.g. *Rafkin et al.*, 2001; *Spiga and*
 3113 *Forget*, 2009), rather than the relatively flat location selected for the landing
 3114 site of the ESA ExoMars Entry Demonstrator Module (EDM).

3115 This study focused on the lower portion of the EDM’s trajectory towards
 3116 the selected landing site. (The very top of the MGCM’s range of modelled
 3117 altitude is less representative of the Martian atmosphere, due to factors such
 3118 as atmospheric sponge layers and limited atmospheric chemistry, and the EDM
 3119 entered a plasma blackout between 68 km Above MOLA Radius (AMR) and 30
 3120 km AMR.) Model and spacecraft data for atmospheric density and temperature
 3121 profiles were compared through altitudes of 30 to 2.76 km AMR, while wind
 3122 speed profiles were compared only below 8.4 km AMR. Neither MGCM nor

3123 MMM data predicted precisely the values in the data returned by the spacecraft
 3124 for atmospheric densities or temperatures, but the MGCM results generally
 3125 display a better match to the EDM data. When comparing the EDM mean wind
 3126 speed profiles, the MGCM is the model that best predicts the wind direction
 3127 and speeds.

3128 The discrepancy between model results and spacecraft data may be evidence
 3129 of a more complex dust environment in the mid-altitude Martian atmosphere
 3130 than that currently used in the MGCM or the MMM. The typical vertical dust
 3131 profile used in the MGCM and MMM is a Conrath profile (*Conrath, 1975*),
 3132 in which the density of dust in the atmosphere is greatest in the near-surface
 3133 boundary region and decreases with height. Recent Mars Climate Sounder
 3134 (MCS) data (*Heavens et al., 2011a*) and data from the Mars Global Surveyor
 3135 (MGS) Thermal Emission Spectrometer (TES) (*Heavens et al., 2011b*) have
 3136 identified discrete dust layers around altitudes of 60 km, higher than the top of
 3137 the well-mixed dust region in the lower atmosphere. *Guzewich et al. (2013b)*
 3138 were able to improve the match between MarsWRF (Weather Research and
 3139 Forecasting) GCM results and TES data by implementing a dust climatology
 3140 that included these high altitude dust layers; similar improvement may be pos-
 3141 sible within the MGCM and MMM.

3142 EDM reported data below the point of parachute deployment show rapid
 3143 variation, and the reported wind speed profiles exhibit a ~ 1 km-wavelength
 3144 oscillation that is not present in the results from either model. The variation
 3145 in the profiles below this altitude (9.4 km AMR) may be a result of true at-
 3146 mospheric features, or a product of incomplete dynamic modelling through this
 3147 portion of the descent.

3148 True atmospheric features that could have affected the EDM during descent
 3149 include local atmospheric phenomena such as a small dust storm or dust cloud,
 3150 or a convective vortex (which might be a dust devil). Modelled dust lifting
 3151 within the region was explored, to investigate the likelihood of the descending
 3152 spacecraft encountering a dust event. The MGCM and MMM dust lifting data
 3153 show agreement on low levels of NSW dust lifting and dust devil activity within
 3154 the region surrounding the landing site, through the sols immediately before and
 3155 after the landing time. This is corroborated by surface and orbital observations

of the area. No published studies have compared directly surface dust lifting across global-scale and mesoscale models, and parameterisations of NSW dust lifting have rarely been used in prior MMM experiments.

7.2 Conclusions and Recommendations

7.2.1 Question 1: Does the model exhibit an accurate, robust geographical representation of dust lifting?

Climate models can be considered robust if they produce results that show agreement with observations (*Knutti and Sedláček, 2013*). Robustness within computer modelling in general is “the degree to which a system or component can function correctly in the presence of invalid inputs” (*IEEE, 1990*). With regard to these MGCM experiments, the ‘invalid input’ could be considered to be the limitations inherent in global-scale resolutions, and the geographical spread of dust lifting is one assessment of the accuracy of the results.

Increasing model horizontal resolution provides a better representation of underlying topographical features, affecting local wind circulations and driving a better geographical representation of surface dust lifting. This study found that the trend of improved representation with increased resolution is not linear: T63 results are more similar to T85 results than to those at the lower resolutions (across wind speed distributions, geographical spread of dust lifting, and total dust lifted annually), despite each step in resolution increase being approximately equal.

This investigation found that the experiment completed at the T63 resolution resolves dust lifting in regions that the lower resolution experiments could not. The T85 experiment improves on the representation of wind speeds and dust lifting in these regions, but it is the inclusion of this lifting (compared to its previous absence) that drives the difference in the results between the lowest and highest resolutions. These dust lifting regions, at polar cap edges in both hemispheres, correlate with observed storm-forming regions. At such latitudes, a T63 experiment is able to resolve surface features of lengths below 100 km. These results suggest that the ability to resolve surface features of the order of

3186 100 km improves the representation of dust lifting within the MGCM.

3187 This work shows that increasing the vertical resolution of the MGCM also
 3188 provides a better representation of the geographical patterns of surface dust lift-
 3189 ing, potentially due to a better resolution of the vertical structure of the lower
 3190 atmosphere. The correlation between improved representation and increased
 3191 resolution is more ambiguous than in the horizontal case, with the highest ver-
 3192 tical resolutions investigated herein (L100) displaying a reduced geographical
 3193 spread of dust lifting (and total dust lifted annually) compared to mid-range
 3194 resolutions (e.g. L60).

3195 Prior to these experiments consideration had been given, within the field
 3196 of Martian global atmospheric modelling, to how many vertical layers are re-
 3197 quired to best represent large-scale phenomena such as thermal tides (*Wilson*
 3198 *and Hamilton*, 1996) and Hadley circulation (*Wilson*, 1997), but there is no
 3199 published literature on the impact that changing model vertical resolution may
 3200 have on surface-level processes.

3201 Recommendations

3202 This work showed that, within MGCM experiments, the geographical pattern of
 3203 dust lifting produced at the typical ‘climate modelling’ horizontal and vertical
 3204 resolutions is not a good representation of surface dust lifting regions on Mars.
 3205 This author recommends that the model’s geographical representation of dust
 3206 lifting should only be considered robust when operated using a horizontal reso-
 3207 lution of T63 ($\sim 2.5^\circ$ latitude $\times \sim 2.5^\circ$ longitude) or higher, and with a vertical
 3208 resolution of at least 50 layers.

3209 It is recommended that the low horizontal and vertical MGCM resolutions
 3210 typically used for long-term climate modelling (e.g. *Basu et al.*, 2004; *Kahre*
 3211 *et al.*, 2005; *Newman et al.*, 2005; *Toigo et al.*, 2012; *Steele et al.*, 2014) are no
 3212 longer used in any experiments designed to investigate surface-level processes
 3213 (such as studies of ground sources of methane), or to study the impact on
 3214 the wider atmosphere of the products of such processes. It is likely that these
 3215 processes, their seasonal and annual variation, and any atmospheric tracers they
 3216 produce, will not be well represented at these low resolutions. These findings
 3217 are crucially important for future users of this particular MGCM, but will also

3218 be useful for anyone using global atmospheric models – Martian and otherwise
3219 – to explore surface-level processes.

3220 Combining these recommended resolutions within global-scale model simula-
3221 tions may result in prohibitively long simulation times. Hence a final recommen-
3222 dation is that the goal of any MGCM experiment is considered carefully prior to
3223 the initiation of any high resolution simulations. Completing a long-term sim-
3224 ulation at a mid-level resolution (e.g. T42L40), interpolating the results, and
3225 then completing a shorter-term experiment at a higher resolution, may provide
3226 one route for optimising simulation time. The success of this approach will
3227 necessarily depend on the precise nature of the experiments in question.

3228 **7.2.2 Question 2: Can the temporal variability of Martian** 3229 **dust lifting be deduced from terrestrial processes?**

3230 Modelled Martian dust devils display a higher level of dust devil activity during
3231 morning hours than was anticipated. This activity is also spread more widely
3232 throughout the length of the sol than expected.

3233 This investigation has shown that diurnal variation in dust devil activity
3234 within the MGCM is governed by near-surface wind speeds. Within the range
3235 of daylight hours, higher wind speeds tend to produce higher levels of dust devil
3236 activity, rather than the activity being simply governed by the availability of
3237 heat at the planet’s surface, which peaks in early afternoon.

3238 These findings were corroborated by comparing modelled results with pub-
3239 lished surface mission *in situ* observations of Martian dust devils. There are
3240 caveats in the corroboration to be considered, such as the fact that some of the
3241 studies used pressure data to detect atmospheric vortices, and not all vortices
3242 entrain dust, so drawing a direct parallel between vortex numbers and dust
3243 devils number may over-estimate the dust devil population. In addition, the
3244 model reports the rate of dust lifting by dust devils, but cannot specify the
3245 number or the size of the dust devils required to lift a given amount of dust.
3246 Finally, the simulations were completed at a resolution resulting in gridboxes
3247 with areas of several hundred square kilometres, so the data relate to quantities
3248 present in these large-scale gridboxes rather than at more local points upon the

surface. However, even allowing these caveats, the model results provide at least a partial match with dust devil observations in the majority of the published studies.

The generally accepted model of Martian dust devil behaviour follows that of terrestrial dust devils, with activity peaking during afternoon hours. This thesis proposes that the generally accepted description of dust devil behaviour on Mars is incomplete, and that theories of dust devil formation may need to be modified specifically for the Martian environment. The results of these experiments are useful both to atmospheric modellers and to researchers studying Martian dust devils through surface and orbital observations.

Recommendations

Theories of Martian dust devil formation may need to be re-assessed, and should at least be better tested with further observations. The model for terrestrial dust devil formation may need to be tailored specifically in order to be more appropriate within a thin, cold, dry atmosphere that spans the surface of a planet, to allow for higher rates of dust devil formation during morning hours.

The differences between the terrestrial and Martian atmospheres should also be considered carefully during the parameterisation of surface-atmosphere processes. The current MGCM parameterisation of dust devils is not necessarily incorrect, but it may be incomplete. One example of this is the input heat source driving the dust devil ‘heat engine’ model. In models of terrestrial dust devils the sensible heat flux is a key factor in the total surface energy budget, and so it is used as the dominant heat source driving dust devil formation. In contrast, in the lower density Martian atmosphere the surface energy budget calculation is dominated by radiative fluxes. A more accurate Martian dust devil parameterisation would incorporate a more complex representation of the input heat available for dust devil formation.

Further surveys of dust devil observations are required to support modification of theory and improvement in model parameterisation. Such studies must extend throughout the full diurnal period, and should encompass surface and orbital observations. Ideally, any observations should be placed within a wider meteorological context, including measurements of local temperatures and wind

3281 speeds. This would allow further investigation into connections between the
 3282 behaviour of dust devils and the local meteorological environment, and also
 3283 facilitate comparisons with studies of terrestrial dust devils.

3284 **7.2.3 Question 3: Is the model’s prediction of the envi-** 3285 **ronment at a selected landing site accurate enough** 3286 **to aid mission planning?**

3287 This case study showed that through the lower portion of the EDM’s trajec-
 3288 tory, the MGCM is able to provide a reasonable prediction of the trends in
 3289 atmospheric properties encountered by the spacecraft (e.g. model temperature
 3290 predictions deviate only $\pm 5\%$ from the proposed mean atmospheric temper-
 3291 ature profile encountered by the spacecraft). The MGCM results also show
 3292 winds that generally match the direction and speed of the mean wind fields re-
 3293 ported through the final few kilometres of the module’s descent, with a model-
 3294 to-observations Root Mean Square Deviation of less than 3.5 m s^{-1} both zonally
 3295 and meridionally. The MMM results provide a comparable prediction of atmo-
 3296 spheric density but are a poorer match for temperatures and wind fields.

3297 These findings suggest that, at least in certain circumstances, MGCM simu-
 3298 lations of mission entry and descent profiles can provide results that are of equal
 3299 or greater accuracy than those produced by higher resolution MMM simulations.
 3300 The MGCM can therefore be used with confidence when predicting large-scale
 3301 atmospheric properties and circulations associated with future landing sites –
 3302 if those sites are relatively flat and uninterrupted by areas of steep topographic
 3303 gradient.

3304 With regard to surface dust lifting processes, the MGCM and MMM results
 3305 are consistent in their estimations of dust lifting rates (and are also consistent
 3306 with the limited observational data). This work is unique in comparing the
 3307 results of MMM surface dust lifting experiments against MGCM experiments
 3308 for terrain of this type, and so this consistency across the different scale models
 3309 is a positive outcome, indicating that the MMM dust cycle parameterisation is
 3310 suitable for use in future research.

3311 **Recommendations**

3312 Mesoscale experiments are still crucial for detailed investigations into complex
 3313 aspects of the Martian atmosphere, and further exploration of mesoscale repre-
 3314 sentations of surface-level dust lifting processes will be an important avenue of
 3315 study.

3316 However, this thesis proposes that future planning of global and mesoscale
 3317 modelling campaigns should consider carefully the near-surface environment
 3318 being modelled: it is possible that spending a large portion of the modelling
 3319 schedule completing a comprehensive set of high resolution global experiments,
 3320 and only then modelling local, short-term situations in the mesoscale, will be a
 3321 better use of time than an early adoption of the mesoscale modelling regime.

3322 **7.3 Further work**

3323 **Model Resolution Studies**

3324 This work has quantified the effect of model resolution on one Martian surface
 3325 dust lifting process, and made specific recommendations with regard to the
 3326 operation of the MGCM. However, a large number of future avenues of research
 3327 still exist within this theme, including further work to test the robustness of
 3328 this aspect of the model:

3329 • **Very high horizontal resolution simulations**

- 3330 – Correct the MGCM code to facilitate the compilation and completion
 3331 of experiments at very high horizontal resolutions, such as T127 and
 3332 T170, with an improved vertical resolution to that currently possible.
- 3333 – Run T170 experiments at a higher data output-rate-per-sol, to en-
 3334 able direct comparison with the set of lower resolution simulations
 3335 completed within this work.

3336 • **Increased vertical resolution simulations**

- 3337 – Investigate the impact of increasing the vertical resolution to L60
 3338 and above in experiments using mid-to-high horizontal resolutions

3339 (i.e T63 and upwards). Note: such experiments will take a long time
 3340 to complete with the current build of the MGCM.

3341 • **Atmospheric features in vertical profiles**

- 3342 – Explore apparent features identified in wind speed vertical profiles.
 3343 Investigate frequency, diurnal and seasonal timings, potential trends
 3344 in altitude, association with terrain height or surface properties.
- 3345 – Test the likelihood of such features affecting near-surface wind speeds.

3346 • **Storm observation comparisons**

- 3347 – Investigate the lack of modelled dust lifting through $L_S = 120\text{-}180^\circ$.
 3348 A number of storms have been observed during this period, widely
 3349 spread across the Northern Hemisphere, but the associated dust lift-
 3350 ing is not exhibited in the model results at any resolution so far
 3351 tested.
- 3352 – Expand the storm observation survey to include smaller, local storms,
 3353 and attempt a more temporally discrete comparison between obser-
 3354 vations and model results.

3355 • **Extending tests of model robustness**

- 3356 – Explore the interaction of the lifting efficiency parameter, α_N , and
 3357 the lifting threshold velocity, u_t^* , as horizontal and vertical model
 3358 resolution are increased.
- 3359 – Run repeated identical simulations at multiple horizontal and verti-
 3360 cal resolutions to assess and quantify the variability within long-term
 3361 experiments, and whether this is affected by resolution change. This
 3362 could assist future improvements in long-term simulations using dif-
 3363 ferent climate states, e.g. experiments modelling the past or future
 3364 Mars climate, which may vary parameters such as obliquity.

Temporal Variability of Dust Lifting

The subject of the diurnal variability of Martian dust lifting processes allows several opportunities for further investigation:

• Dust devil lifting

- Test the current Martian dust devil parameterisation by incorporating it into an Earth GCM. GCMs used in Earth climate modelling usually do not include detailed parameterisations of dust devil behaviour (*Engelstaedter and Washington, 2007*), primarily because the contribution to the global aerosol budget of dust lifted by dust devils is minimal (*Jemmett-Smith et al., 2015*), although Large Eddy Simulations have been developed that consider convective lifting phenomena (*Klose and Shao, 2013*).
- Improve the representation of the input heat available for dust devil formation within the parameterisation, i.e. use radiative fluxes, rather than sensible heat flux, to calculate the surface energy budget.
- Consider the specific differences between the Martian and terrestrial atmospheric environments and develop a more tailored theory of Martian dust devil formation.

• Near-surface wind stress lifting

- Explore the diurnal variability of NSWS dust lifting, and how this may vary through the course of the year.

• Comparison with observations

- Compare the diurnal timings of future observations of dust devils with the findings of this investigation, both orbital (e.g. CaSSIS) and surface (e.g. Curiosity, InSight) missions, with a goal of assessing the wider meteorological context surrounding Martian dust devil formation and development.
- Compare the modelled Martian dust devil activity with future terrestrial studies of the diurnal timings of dust devil, such as *Klose et al. (2014)* and the Europlanet Moroccan desert study completed in June

2018 (led by J. Raack), which test the assumption that terrestrial dust devils are always more common during afternoon hours.

Landing Site Predictions

Although the data returned by the EDM are limited in nature, the results of this case study still open up further lines of research:

- **Model improvements**

- Explore the discrepancies between MGCM temperature profile data and the EDM and Mars Climate Sounder data, with regard to potential temperature inversions at mid-altitudes; this should include comparisons with descent profiles obtained from other spacecraft.

- **Increased complexity in simulations**

- Test the impact of increasing the vertical resolution of MMM simulations.
- Run MMM simulations including the dust lifting parameterisations for different locations across the surface of the planet, including regions that have more varied topography than the EDM landing site.
- Test the operation of the dust lifting parameterisations within non-hydrostatic MMM simulations.
- Complete longer-term MMM experiments.
- Explore two-way nesting within MMM simulations.
- When possible, explore the results of very high horizontal and vertical resolution MGCM simulations at the EDM landing site location.

- **Model comparisons**

- Investigate whether MGCM results still out-perform MMM results at this location through different seasons, and at different times during the sol.
- Explore similar historical and potential landing sites (i.e. equatorial latitudes with relatively flat topography) and compare MGCM and MMM results.

- Quantify the differences between the Martian surface used in both models (e.g. details in topography, albedo and thermal inertia) and assess how any divergence in the representation of surface properties may impact the dust lifting parameterisations.
- **Further comparison with observations**
 - Comparison of MGCM and MMM results with observations of the (relatively) local environment recorded by Opportunity, and any images taken by the rover during the sol of the EDM’s descent, could provide additional information on the low-altitude dust environment that the EDM encountered. These data have not yet been released at the time of writing.

7.4 Final Words

Atmospheric dust is a key component in the Martian climate. Improving our understanding of the dust cycle (lifting, transportation and deposition) improves our insight into Martian long-term weather and climate patterns, and facilitates better predictions of the future climate of the planet. This work has explored in detail one aspect of the Martian dust cycle, focusing on the representation of surface dust lifting processes within a global atmospheric model, and considering the impact of dust lifting on the near-surface environment.

The recommendations made with regard to changes in model resolution are crucially important for future users of this particular MGCM, and are expected to be relevant to researchers currently using other Mars GCMs. The findings in this thesis may also be of use to scientists operating global atmospheric models for other terrestrial bodies.

The dust devil parameterisation in operation within the MGCM has been used as the basis for similar parameterisations in the NASA Ames Mars GCM and the GFDL Mars GCM. The findings of this investigation are therefore relevant and important to the wider Martian atmospheric modelling community. The results are also of interest to scientists planning dust devil observation campaigns for Martian surface missions.

3454 The landing site case study found that, for certain landing locations on
3455 Mars, the global-scale MGCM performs as well as the mesoscale MMM. This
3456 is an important finding that should be considered when planning atmospheric
3457 modelling campaigns for Mars landing missions.

3458 The MGCM is a robust global atmospheric model. It is a crucial experimen-
3459 tal ground for further exploration of the temporal and geographical variation in
3460 Martian surface dust lifting processes.

Bibliography

- Aboudan, A., G. Colombatti, C. Bettanini, F. Ferri, S. R. Lewis, B. Van Hove,
O. Karatekin, and S. Debei, Schiaparelli Module Trajectory and Atmospheric
Profiles Reconstruction, submitted, space Science Reviews.
- Almeida, M. P., E. J. R. Parteli, J. S. Andrade, and H. J. Herrmann, Giant
saltation on Mars, *Proceedings of the National Academy of Sciences*, *105*,
6222–6226, 2008.
- Anderson, E., and C. Leovy, Mariner 9 Television Limb Observations of Dust
and Ice Hazes on Mars, *Journal of the Atmospheric Sciences*, *35*, 723–734,
1978.
- Andrews, D. G., *An Introduction to Atmospheric Physics*, second ed., Cam-
bridge University Press, 2010.
- Bagnold, R. A., The Transport of Sand by Wind, *The Geographical Journal*,
89, 409–438, 1937.
- Balme, M. R., and R. Greeley, Dust devils on Earth and Mars, *Reviews of*
Geophysics, *44*, RG3003, 2006.
- Balme, M. R., S. M. Metzger, M. C. Towner, T. J. Ringrose, R. Greeley, and
J. Iversen, Friction wind speeds in dust devils: A field study, *Geophysical*
Research Letters, *30*, 2003a.
- Balme, M. R., P. L. Whelley, and R. Greeley, Mars: Dust devil track survey in
Argyre Planitia and Hellas Basin, *Journal of Geophysical Research: Planets*,
108, 5086, 2003b.

- 3483 Balme, M. R., et al., Field measurements of horizontal forward motion velocities
3484 of terrestrial dust devils: Towards a proxy for ambient winds on Mars and
3485 Earth, *Icarus*, *221*, 632–645, 2012.
- 3486 Basu, S., M. I. Richardson, and R. J. Wilson, Simulation of the Martian dust
3487 cycle with the GFDL Mars GCM, *Journal of Geophysical Research*, *109*,
3488 E11,006, 2004.
- 3489 Basu, S., J. Wilson, M. I. Richardson, and A. Ingersoll, Simulation of sponta-
3490 neous and variable global dust storms with the GFDL Mars GCM, *Journal*
3491 *of Geophysical Research*, *111*, E09,004, 2006.
- 3492 Bourke, W., An efficient, one-level, primitive-equation spectral model, *Monthly*
3493 *Weather Review*, *100*, 683–691, 1972.
- 3494 Bourke, W., A Multi-Level Spectral Model. I. Formulation and Hemispheric
3495 Integrations, *Monthly Weather Review*, pp. 687–701, 1974.
- 3496 Cantor, B. A., MOC observations of the 2001 Mars planet-encircling dust storm,
3497 *Icarus*, *186*, 60–96, 2007.
- 3498 Cantor, B. A., P. B. James, M. Caplinger, and M. J. Wolff, Martian dust storms:
3499 1999 Mars Orbiter Camera observations, *Journal of Geophysical Research*,
3500 *106*, 23,653, 2001.
- 3501 Cantor, B. A., K. M. Kanak, and K. S. Edgett, Mars Orbiter Camera obser-
3502 vations of Martian dust devils and their tracks (September 1997 to January
3503 2006) and evaluation of theoretical vortex models, *Journal of Geophysical*
3504 *Research*, *111*, E12,002, 2006.
- 3505 Cantor, B. A., P. B. James, and W. M. Calvin, MARCI and MOC observations
3506 of the atmosphere and surface cap in the north polar region of Mars, *Icarus*,
3507 *208*, 61–81, 2010.
- 3508 Chapman, R. M., S. R. Lewis, M. Balme, and L. J. Steele, Diurnal Variation in
3509 Martian Dust Devil Activity, *Icarus*, *292*, 154–167, 2017.
- 3510 Chen, A., A. Cianciolo, A. R. Vasavada, C. Karlgaard, J. Barnes, B. A. Cantor,
3511 D. M. Kass, S. C. R. Rafkin, and D. Tyler, Reconstruction of Atmospheric

- 3512 Properties from Mars Science Laboratory Entry, Descent, and Landing, *Jour-*
 3513 *nal of Spacecraft and Rockets*, 51, 1062–1075, 2014.
- 3514 Choi, D. S., and C. M. Dundas, Measurements of Martian dust devil winds with
 3515 HiRISE, *Geophysical Research Letters*, 38, n/a–n/a, 2011.
- 3516 Christensen, P. R., et al., Mars Global Surveyor Thermal Emission Spectrometer
 3517 experiment: Investigation description and surface science results, *Journal of*
 3518 *Geophysical Research: Planets*, 106, 23,823–23,871, 2001.
- 3519 Clancy, R. T., S. W. Lee, G. R. Gladstone, W. W. McMillan, and T. Rousch,
 3520 A new model for Mars atmospheric dust based upon analysis of ultraviolet
 3521 through infrared observations from Mariner 9, Viking, and Phobos, *Journal*
 3522 *of Geophysical Research*, 100, 5251, 1995.
- 3523 Clancy, R. T., B. J. Sandor, M. J. Wolff, P. R. Christensen, M. D. Smith, J. C.
 3524 Pearl, B. J. Conrath, and R. J. Wilson, An intercomparison of ground-based
 3525 millimeter, MGS TES, and Viking atmospheric temperature measurements:
 3526 Seasonal and interannual variability of temperatures and dust loading in the
 3527 global Mars atmosphere, *Journal of Geophysical Research*, 105, 9553, 2000.
- 3528 Clancy, R. T., M. J. Wolff, B. A. Whitney, B. A. Cantor, M. D. Smith, and
 3529 T. H. McConnochie, Extension of atmospheric dust loading to high altitudes
 3530 during the 2001 Mars dust storm: MGS TES limb observations, *Icarus*, 207,
 3531 98–109, 2010.
- 3532 Claudin, P., and B. Andreotti, A scaling law for aeolian dunes on Mars, Venus,
 3533 Earth, and for subaqueous ripples, *Earth and Planetary Science Letters*, 252,
 3534 30–44, 2006.
- 3535 Colburn, D. S., J. B. Pollack, and R. M. Haberle, Diurnal variations in optical
 3536 depth at Mars, *Icarus*, 79, 159–189, 1989.
- 3537 Conrath, B. J., Thermal structure of the Martian atmosphere during the dissi-
 3538 pation of the dust storm of 1971, *Icarus*, 24, 36–46, 1975.
- 3539 Daerden, F., J. A. Whiteway, L. Neary, L. Komguem, M. T. Lemmon, N. G.
 3540 Heavens, B. A. Cantor, E. Hébrard, and M. D. Smith, A solar escalator on

- 3541 Mars: Self-lifting of dust layers by radiative heating, *Geophysical Research*
3542 *Letters*, *42*, 7319–7326, 2015.
- 3543 de Vaucouleurs, G., M. E. Davies, and F. M. Sturms, Mariner 9 Areographic
3544 Coordinate System, *Journal of Geophysical Research*, *78*, 4395–4404, 1973.
- 3545 Ellehoj, M. D., et al., Convective vortices and dust devils at the Phoenix Mars
3546 mission landing site, *Journal of Geophysical Research*, *115*, E00E16, 2010.
- 3547 Engelstaedter, S., and R. Washington, Atmospheric controls on the annual cycle
3548 of North African dust, *Journal of Geophysical Research*, *112*, D03,103, 2007.
- 3549 Esau, I. N., Parameterization of a surface drag coefficient in conventionally
3550 neutral planetary boundary layer, *Annales Geophysicae*, *22*, 3353–3362, 2004.
- 3551 Esposito, F., et al., The DREAMS experiment on the ExoMars 2016 mission for
3552 the study of Martian environment during the dust storm season, in *Fifth In-*
3553 *ternational Workshop on the Mars Atmosphere: Modelling and Observations*,
3554 2014.
- 3555 Fenton, L. K., and R. D. Lorenz, Dust devil height and spacing with relation to
3556 the martian planetary boundary layer thickness, *Icarus*, *260*, 246–262, 2015.
- 3557 Fenton, L. K., P. E. Geissler, and R. M. Haberle, Global warming and climate
3558 forcing by recent albedo changes on Mars., *Nature*, *446*, 646–9, 2007.
- 3559 Fenton, L. K., D. Reiss, M. T. Lemmon, B. Marticorena, S. R. Lewis, and
3560 B. A. Cantor, Orbital Observations of Dust Lofted by Daytime Convective
3561 Turbulence, *Space Science Reviews*, pp. 1–54, 2016.
- 3562 Ferri, F., P. H. Smith, M. T. Lemmon, and N. O. Rennó, Dust devils as observed
3563 by Mars Pathfinder, *Journal of Geophysical Research*, *108*, 5133, 2003.
- 3564 Ferri, F., F. Forget, S. R. Lewis, and O. Karatekin, ExoMars Atmospheric Mars
3565 Entry and Landing Investigations and Analysis (AMELIA), in *9th Interna-*
3566 *tional Planetary Probe Workshop (IPPW9)*, 2012.
- 3567 Ferri, F., et al., Atmospheric Mars Entry and Landing Investigations & Analysis
3568 (AMELIA) by ExoMars 2016 Schiaparelli Entry Descent Module, in *2017*
3569 *IEEE International Workshop on Metrology for AeroSpace*, 2017.

- 3570 Fisher, J. A., M. I. Richardson, C. E. Newman, M. A. Szewast, C. Graf, S. Basu,
3571 S. P. Ewald, A. D. Toigo, and R. J. Wilson, A survey of Martian dust devil
3572 activity using Mars Global Surveyor Mars Orbiter Camera images, *Journal*
3573 *of Geophysical Research*, *110*, E03,004, 2005.
- 3574 Fitzjarrald, D. E., A Field Investigation of Dust Devils, *Journal of Applied*
3575 *Meteorology*, *12*, 808–813, 1973.
- 3576 Forget, F., F. Hourdin, and O. Talagrand, CO₂ Snowfall on Mars: Simulation
3577 with a General Circulation Model, *Icarus*, *131*, 302–316, 1998.
- 3578 Forget, F., F. Hourdin, R. Fournier, C. Hourdin, O. Talagrand, M. Collins, S. R.
3579 Lewis, P. L. Read, and J. P. Huot, Improved general circulation models of the
3580 Martian atmosphere from the surface to above 80 km, *Journal of Geophysical*
3581 *Research*, *104*, 24,155–24,175, 1999.
- 3582 Forget, F., A. Spiga, L. Montabone, E. Millour, A. Colaïtis, and V. Bour-
3583 rier, Characterizing the Martian atmosphere for the ExoMars 2016 lander,
3584 in *Fourth International Workshop on the Mars Atmosphere: Modeling and*
3585 *Observations*, 2011.
- 3586 Forget, F., E. Millour, and S. R. Lewis, Mars Climate Database v5.1 Detailed
3587 Design Document, *Tech. rep.*, 2015.
- 3588 Gierasch, P. J., and R. M. Goody, The Effect of Dust on the Temperature of
3589 the Martian Atmosphere, *Journal of the Atmospheric Sciences*, *29*, 400–402,
3590 1971.
- 3591 Gierasch, P. J., and R. M. Goody, A Model of a Martian Great Dust Storm,
3592 *Journal of the Atmospheric Sciences*, *30*, 169–179, 1973.
- 3593 Greeley, R., Saltation impact as a means for raising dust on Mars, *Planetary*
3594 *and Space Science*, *50*, 151–155, 2002.
- 3595 Greeley, R., M. R. Balme, J. Iversen, S. M. Metzger, R. Mickelson, J. Phore-
3596 man, and B. White, Martian dust devils: Laboratory simulations of particle
3597 threshold, *Journal of Geophysical Research*, *108*, 5041, 2003.

- 3598 Greeley, R., D. A. Waller, N. A. Cabrol, G. A. Landis, M. T. Lemmon, L. D. V.
3599 Neakrase, M. Pendleton Hoffer, S. D. Thompson, and P. L. Whelley, Gusev
3600 Crater, Mars: Observations of three dust devil seasons, *Journal of Geophysical*
3601 *Research*, *115*, E00F02, 2010.
- 3602 Greeley, R., et al., Active dust devils in Gusev crater, Mars: Observations from
3603 the Mars Exploration Rover Spirit, *Journal of Geophysical Research*, *111*,
3604 E12S09, 2006.
- 3605 Guzewich, S. D., E. R. Talaat, A. D. Toigo, D. W. Waugh, and T. H. Mc-
3606 Connochie, High-altitude dust layers on Mars: Observations with the Ther-
3607 mal Emission Spectrometer, *Journal of Geophysical Research: Planets*, *118*,
3608 1177–1194, 2013a.
- 3609 Guzewich, S. D., A. D. Toigo, M. I. Richardson, C. E. Newman, E. R. Talaat,
3610 D. W. Waugh, and T. H. McConnochie, The impact of a realistic vertical dust
3611 distribution on the simulation of the Martian General Circulation, *Journal of*
3612 *Geophysical Research: Planets*, *118*, 980–993, 2013b.
- 3613 Guzewich, S. D., A. D. Toigo, and D. W. Waugh, The effect of dust on the
3614 martian polar vortices, *Icarus*, *278*, 100–118, 2016.
- 3615 Haberle, R. M., Planetary Atmospheres: Mars, *Encyclopedia of Atmospheric*
3616 *Sciences*, *5*, 1745–1755, 2003.
- 3617 Haberle, R. M., C. B. Leovy, and J. B. Pollack, Some effects of global dust
3618 storms on the atmospheric circulation of Mars, *Icarus*, *50*, 322–367, 1982.
- 3619 Haberle, R. M., R. T. Clancy, F. Forget, M. D. Smith, and R. W. Zurek (Eds.),
3620 *The Atmosphere and Climate of Mars*, Cambridge University Press, Cam-
3621 bridge, 2017.
- 3622 Hanel, R. A., B. J. Conrath, W. A. Hovis, V. G. Kunde, P. D. Lowman, J. C.
3623 Pearl, C. Prabhakara, B. Schlachman, and G. V. Levin, Infrared Spectroscopy
3624 Experiment on the Mariner 9 Mission: Preliminary Results, *Science*, *175*,
3625 305–308, 1972.
- 3626 Hansen, J. E., and L. D. Travis, Light scattering in planetary atmospheres,
3627 *Space Science Reviews*, *16*, 527–610, 1974.

- Heavens, N. G., Textured Dust Storm Activity in Northeast Amazonis–Southwest Arcadia, Mars: Phenomenology and Dynamical Interpretation, *Journal of the Atmospheric Sciences*, *74*, 1011–1037, 2017.
- Heavens, N. G., D. J. McCleese, M. I. Richardson, D. M. Kass, A. Kleinböhl, and J. T. Schofield, Structure and dynamics of the Martian lower and middle atmosphere as observed by the Mars Climate Sounder: 2. Implications of the thermal structure and aerosol distributions for the mean meridional circulation, *Journal of Geophysical Research*, *116*, E01,010, 2011a.
- Heavens, N. G., M. S. Johnson, W. A. Abdou, D. M. Kass, A. Kleinböhl, D. J. McCleese, J. H. Shirley, and R. J. Wilson, Seasonal and diurnal variability of detached dust layers in the tropical Martian atmosphere, *Journal of Geophysical Research: Planets*, *119*, 1748–1774, 2014.
- Heavens, N. G., et al., The vertical distribution of dust in the Martian atmosphere during northern spring and summer: Observations by the Mars Climate Sounder and analysis of zonal average vertical dust profiles, *Journal of Geophysical Research*, *116*, E04,003, 2011b.
- Hébrard, E., C. Listowski, P. Coll, B. Marticorena, G. Bergametti, A. Määttänen, F. Montmessin, and F. Forget, An aerodynamic roughness length map derived from extended Martian rock abundance data, *Journal of Geophysical Research: Planets*, *117*, 2012.
- Heintzenberg, J., Properties of the Log-Normal Particle Size Distribution, *Aerosol Science and Technology*, *21*, 46–48, 1994.
- Held, I. M., and M. J. Suarez, A Proposal for the Intercomparison of the Dynamical Cores of Atmospheric General Circulation Models, *Bulletin of the American Meteorological Society*, *75*, 1825–1830, 1994.
- Hess, S. L., Some Aspects of the Meteorology of Mars, *Journal of Meteorology*, *7*, 1–13, 1950.
- Hinson, D. P., and H. Wang, Further observations of regional dust storms and baroclinic eddies in the northern hemisphere of Mars, *Icarus*, *206*, 290–305, 2010.

- 3658 Hinson, D. P., M. Pätzold, S. Tellmann, B. Häusler, and G. L. Tyler, The depth
3659 of the convective boundary layer on Mars, *Icarus*, 198, 57–66, 2008.
- 3660 Hollingsworth, J. L., R. M. Haberle, J. R. Barnes, A. F. C. Bridger, J. B.
3661 Pollack, H. Lee, and J. Schaeffer, Orographic control of storm zones on Mars,
3662 *Nature*, 380, 413–416, 1996.
- 3663 Hoskins, B. J., and A. J. Simmons, A multi-layer spectral model and the semi-
3664 implicit method, *Quarterly Journal of the Royal Meteorological Society*, 101,
3665 637–655, 1975.
- 3666 Hourdin, F., A new representation of the absorption by the CO₂ 15- μ m band
3667 for a Martian general circulation model, *Journal of Geophysical Research*, 97,
3668 18,319, 1992.
- 3669 Hourdin, F., P. Le Van, F. Forget, and O. Talagrand, Meteorological Variability
3670 and the Annual Surface Pressure Cycle on Mars, *Journal of the Atmospheric*
3671 *Sciences*, 50, 3625–3640, 1993.
- 3672 IEEE, *IEEE Standard Glossary of Software Engineering Terminology*, 2002 ed.,
3673 IEEE, 1990.
- 3674 Jemmett-Smith, B. C., J. H. Marsham, P. Knippertz, and C. A. Gilkeson, Quan-
3675 tifying global dust devil occurrence from meteorological analyses, *Geophysical*
3676 *research letters*, 42, 1275–1282, 2015.
- 3677 JPL, Opportunity’s Devilish View from on High.
- 3678 Kahanpää, H., et al., Convective vortices and dust devils at the MSL landing
3679 site: Annual variability, *Journal of Geophysical Research: Planets*, 2016.
- 3680 Kahn, R., T. Z. Martin, R. W. Zurek, and S. W. Lee, The Martian Dust Cycle,
3681 in *Mars*, edited by H. H. Kieffer, B. M. Jakosky, C. W. Snyder, and M. S.
3682 Matthews, chap. 29, pp. 1017–1053, The University of Arizona Press, Tucson,
3683 1992.
- 3684 Kahre, M. A., J. R. Murphy, R. M. Haberle, F. Montmessin, and J. Schaeffer,
3685 Simulating the Martian dust cycle with a finite surface dust reservoir,
3686 *Geophysical Research Letters*, 32, L20,204, 2005.

- 3687 Kahre, M. A., J. R. Murphy, and R. M. Haberle, Modeling the Martian dust
3688 cycle and surface dust reservoirs with the NASA Ames general circulation
3689 model, *Journal of Geophysical Research*, *111*, E06,008, 2006.
- 3690 Kahre, M. A., J. L. Hollingsworth, R. M. Haberle, and J. R. Murphy, Investiga-
3691 tions of the variability of dust particle sizes in the martian atmosphere using
3692 the NASA Ames General Circulation Model, *Icarus*, *195*, 576–597, 2008.
- 3693 Kahre, M. A., J. R. Murphy, C. E. Newman, R. J. Wilson, B. A. Cantor,
3694 M. T. Lemmon, and M. J. Wolff, The Mars Dust Cycle, in *The Atmosphere
3695 and Climate of Mars*, edited by R. M. Haberle, R. T. Clancy, F. Forget,
3696 M. D. Smith, and R. W. Zurek, pp. 295–337, Cambridge University Press,
3697 Cambridge, 2017.
- 3698 Kalnay, E., *Atmospheric Modelling, Data Assimilation and Predictability*, Cam-
3699 bridge University Press, 2003.
- 3700 Kanak, K. M., D. K. Lilly, and J. T. Snow, The formation of vertical Vortices in
3701 the convective boundary layer, *Quarterly Journal of the Royal Meteorological
3702 Society*, *126*, 2789–2810, 2000.
- 3703 Kass, D. M., J. T. Schofield, T. I. Michaels, S. C. R. Rafkin, M. I. Richardson,
3704 and A. D. Toigo, Analysis of atmospheric mesoscale models for entry, descent,
3705 and landing, *Journal of Geophysical Research*, *108*, 8090, 2003.
- 3706 Kass, D. M., A. Kleinböhl, D. J. McCleese, J. T. Schofield, and M. D. Smith, In-
3707 terannual similarity in the Martian atmosphere during the dust storm season,
3708 *Geophysical Research Letters*, *43*, 6111–6118, 2016.
- 3709 Keating, G. M., et al., The structure of the upper atmosphere of mars: In situ
3710 accelerometer measurements from mars global surveyor, *Science (New York,
3711 N.Y.)*, *279*, 1672–6, 1998.
- 3712 Kinch, K. M., J. F. Bell, and M. B. Madsen, Dust deposition and removal at
3713 the MER landing sites from observations of the Panoramic Camera (Pancam)
3714 calibration targets, in *American Geophysical Union, Fall Meeting 2012*, 2012.

- 3715 Kleinböhl, A., J. T. Schofield, D. M. Kass, W. A. Abdou, and D. J. McCleese,
3716 No widespread dust in the middle atmosphere of Mars from Mars Climate
3717 Sounder observations, 2015.
- 3718 Klose, M., and Y. Shao, Large-eddy simulation of turbulent dust emission, *Ae-*
3719 *olian Research*, *8*, 49–58, 2013.
- 3720 Klose, M., Y. Shao, X. Li, H. Zhang, M. Ishizuka, M. Mikami, and J. F. Leys,
3721 Further development of a parameterization for convective turbulent dust emis-
3722 sion and evaluation based on field observations, *Journal of Geophysical Re-*
3723 *search: Atmospheres*, *119*, 10,441–10,457, 2014.
- 3724 Knutti, R., and J. Sedláček, Robustness and uncertainties in the new CMIP5
3725 climate model projections, *Nature Climate Change*, *3*, 369–373, 2013.
- 3726 Koch, J., and N. O. Rennó, The role of convective plumes and vortices on the
3727 global aerosol budget, *Geophysical Research Letters*, *32*, 2005.
- 3728 Kok, J. F., Difference in the Wind Speeds Required for Initiation versus Contin-
3729 uation of Sand Transport on Mars: Implications for Dunes and Dust Storms,
3730 *Physical Review Letters*, *104*, 2010.
- 3731 Kok, J. F., and N. O. Rennó, Enhancement of the emission of mineral dust
3732 aerosols by electric forces, *Geophysical Research Letters*, *33*, L19S10, 2006.
- 3733 Kok, J. F., and N. O. Rennó, Electrostatics in Wind-Blown Sand, *Physical*
3734 *Review Letters*, *100*, 014,501, 2008.
- 3735 Komguem, L., J. A. Whiteway, C. Dickinson, M. Daly, and M. T. Lemmon,
3736 Phoenix LIDAR measurements of Mars atmospheric dust, *Icarus*, *223*, 649–
3737 653, 2013.
- 3738 Kurgansky, M. V., A. Montecinos, V. Villagran, and S. M. Metzger, Microm-
3739 eteorological conditions for dust-devil occurrence in the Atacama Desert,
3740 *Boundary-Layer Meteorology*, *138*, 285–298, 2010.
- 3741 Landis, G. A., and P. P. Jenkins, Measurement of the settling rate of atmo-
3742 spheric dust on Mars by the MAE instrument on Mars Pathfinder, *Journal*
3743 *of Geophysical Research: Planets*, *105*, 1855–1857, 2000.

- 3744 Larsen, S. E., H. E. Jørgensen, L. Landberg, and J. E. Tillman, Aspects of the
3745 atmospheric surface layers on Mars and Earth, *Boundary-Layer Meteorology*,
3746 *105*, 451–470, 2002.
- 3747 Lemmon, M. T., M. J. Wolff, J. F. Bell III, M. D. Smith, B. A. Cantor, and P. H.
3748 Smith, Dust aerosol, clouds, and the atmospheric optical depth record over
3749 5 Mars years of the Mars Exploration Rover mission, *Icarus*, *251*, 96–111,
3750 2015.
- 3751 Leovy, C. B., R. W. Zurek, and J. B. Pollack, Mechanisms for Mars Dust Storms,
3752 *Journal of the Atmospheric Sciences*, *30*, 749–762, 1973.
- 3753 Lewis, S. R., M. Collins, P. L. Read, F. Forget, F. Hourdin, R. Fournier, C. Hour-
3754 din, O. Talagrand, and J. P. Huot, A climate database for Mars, *Journal of*
3755 *Geophysical Research*, *104*, 24,177, 1999.
- 3756 Lewis, S. R., D. P. Mulholland, P. L. Read, L. Montabone, R. J. Wilson, and
3757 M. D. Smith, The solsticial pause on Mars: 1. A planetary wave reanalysis,
3758 *Icarus*, *264*, 456–464, 2016.
- 3759 Liu, J., M. I. Richardson, and R. J. Wilson, An assessment of the global, sea-
3760 sonal, and interannual spacecraft record of Martian climate in the thermal
3761 infrared, *Journal of Geophysical Research*, *108*, 5089, 2003.
- 3762 López-Valverde, M. A., D. P. Edwards, M. López-Puertas, and C. Roldán, Non-
3763 local thermodynamic equilibrium in general circulation models of the Martian
3764 atmosphere 1. Effects of the local thermodynamic equilibrium approximation
3765 on thermal cooling and solar heating, *Journal of Geophysical Research: Plan-*
3766 *ets*, *103*, 16,799–16,811, 1998.
- 3767 Lorenz, R. D., and P. D. Lanagan, A barometric survey of dust-devil vortices
3768 on a desert playa, *Boundary-Layer Meteorology*, *153*, 555–568, 2014.
- 3769 Lorenz, R. D., and J. Radebaugh, Dust devils in thin air: Vortex observations
3770 at a high elevation Mars analog site in the Argentinian Puna, *Geophysical*
3771 *Research Letters*, 2016.
- 3772 Lorenz, R. D., and D. Reiss, Solar panel clearing events, dust devil tracks, and
3773 in-situ vortex detections on Mars, *Icarus*, *248*, 162–164, 2015.

- 3774 Lott, F., and M. J. Miller, A new subgrid-scale orographic drag parametrization:
3775 Its formulation and testing, *Quarterly Journal of the Royal Meteorological*
3776 *Society*, *123*, 101–127, 1997.
- 3777 Lowell, P., Mars in 1907, *Nature*, *76*, 446–446, 1907.
- 3778 Lyons, T. J., U. S. Nair, and I. J. Foster, Clearing enhances dust devil formation,
3779 *Journal of Arid Environments*, *72*, 1918–1928, 2008.
- 3780 Määttänen, A., H. Vehkamäki, A. Lauri, S. Merikallio, J. Kauhanen,
3781 H. Savijärvi, and M. Kulmala, Nucleation studies in the Martian atmosphere,
3782 *Journal of Geophysical Research*, *110*, E02,002, 2005.
- 3783 Määttänen, A., C. Listowski, F. Montmessin, L. Maltagliati, A. Reberac, L. Joly,
3784 and J.-L. Bertaux, A complete climatology of the aerosol vertical distribution
3785 on Mars from MEx/SPICAM UV solar occultations, *Icarus*, *223*, 892–941,
3786 2013.
- 3787 Madeleine, J.-B., F. Forget, E. Millour, T. Navarro, and A. Spiga, The influence
3788 of radiatively active water ice clouds on the Martian climate, *Geophysical*
3789 *Research Letters*, *39*, n/a–n/a, 2012.
- 3790 Malin, M. C., J. F. Bell III, W. M. Calvin, R. T. Clancy, R. M. Haberle, P. B.
3791 James, S. W. Lee, P. C. Thomas, and M. A. Caplinger, Mars Color Imager
3792 (MARCI) on the Mars Climate Orbiter, *Journal of Geophysical Research E:*
3793 *Planets*, *106*, 17,651–17,672, 2001.
- 3794 Malin, M. C., B. A. Cantor, and A. W. Britton, MRO MARCI Weather Report
3795 for the week of 17 October 2016 – 23 October 2016, Malin Space Science
3796 Systems Captioned Image Release, MSSS-449, 2016.
- 3797 Martin, T. Z., Thermal infrared opacity of the Mars atmosphere, *Icarus*, *66*,
3798 2–21, 1986.
- 3799 McCleese, D. J., et al., Mars Climate Sounder: An investigation of thermal and
3800 water vapor structure, dust and condensate distributions in the atmosphere,
3801 and energy balance of the polar regions, *Journal of Geophysical Research*,
3802 *112*, E05S06, 2007.

- 3803 McCleese, D. J., et al., Structure and dynamics of the Martian lower and middle
3804 atmosphere as observed by the Mars Climate Sounder: Seasonal variations in
3805 zonal mean temperature, dust, and water ice aerosols, *Journal of Geophysical*
3806 *Research*, *115*, E12,016, 2010.
- 3807 McGuffie, K., and A. Henderson-Sellers, *A Climate Modelling Primer*, third ed.,
3808 John Wiley & Sons, Ltd, 2005.
- 3809 McSween, H. Y., and K. Keil, Mixing relationships in the Martian regolith and
3810 the composition of globally homogeneous dust, *Geochimica et Cosmochimica*
3811 *Acta*, *64*, 2155–2166, 2000.
- 3812 Merrison, J., J. Jensen, K. Kinch, R. Mugford, and P. Nornberg, The electrical
3813 properties of Mars analogue dust, *Planetary and Space Science*, *52*, 279–290,
3814 2004.
- 3815 Michaels, T. I., A. Colaprete, and S. C. R. Rafkin, Significant vertical water
3816 transport by mountain-induced circulations on Mars, *Geophysical Research*
3817 *Letters*, *33*, L16,201, 2006.
- 3818 Millour, E., et al., The Mars Climate Database (MCD version 5.2), in *European*
3819 *Planetary Science Congress*, 2015.
- 3820 Mishchenko, M. I., Light scattering by randomly oriented axially symmetric
3821 particles, *Journal of the Optical Society of America A*, *8*, 871, 1991.
- 3822 Montabone, L., and F. Forget, Forecasting Dust Storms on Mars: A Short
3823 Review, in *Dust in the Atmosphere of Mars*, 2017.
- 3824 Montabone, L., F. Forget, E. Millour, and T. Navarro, Technical note: Mars
3825 weather forecast for the Exomars 2016 EDL, *Tech. rep.*, Laboratoire de
3826 Météorologie Dynamique, Université Pierre et Marie Curie, Paris, France,
3827 2015a.
- 3828 Montabone, L., B. A. Cantor, F. Forget, D. Kass, A. Kleinböhl, M. D. Smith,
3829 and M. J. Wolff, On the Dustiest Locations on Mars from Observations, in
3830 *Fifth International Workshop on the Mars Atmosphere: Modelling and Ob-*
3831 *servations*, 2017.

- 3832 Montabone, L., et al., Eight-year climatology of dust optical depth on Mars,
3833 *Icarus*, *251*, 65–95, 2015b.
- 3834 Morris, R. V., et al., Mineralogy, composition, and alteration of Mars Pathfinder
3835 rocks and soils: Evidence from multispectral, elemental, and magnetic data
3836 on terrestrial analogue, SNC meteorite, and Pathfinder samples, *Journal of*
3837 *Geophysical Research: Planets*, *105*, 1757–1817, 2000.
- 3838 Mulholland, D. P., Martian dust lifting, transport and associated processes,
3839 Ph.D. thesis, St. Anne’s College, University of Oxford, 2012.
- 3840 Mulholland, D. P., P. L. Read, and S. R. Lewis, Simulating the interannual
3841 variability of major dust storms on Mars using variable lifting thresholds,
3842 *Icarus*, *223*, 344–358, 2013.
- 3843 Mulholland, D. P., A. Spiga, C. Listowski, and P. L. Read, An assessment of the
3844 impact of local processes on dust lifting in Martian climate models, *Icarus*,
3845 2015.
- 3846 Murphy, J. R., and S. Nelli, Mars Pathfinder convective vortices: Frequency of
3847 occurrence, *Geophysical Research Letters*, *29*, 2103, 2002.
- 3848 National Center for Atmospheric Research Staff (Eds.), The Climate Data
3849 Guide: Common Spectral Model Grid Resolutions.
- 3850 Neakrase, L. D. V., and R. Greeley, Dust devil sediment flux on Earth and
3851 Mars: Laboratory simulations, *Icarus*, *206*, 306–318, 2010.
- 3852 Newman, C. E., Modelling the dust cycle in the Martian atmosphere, Ph.D.
3853 thesis, St. Anne’s College, University of Oxford, 2001.
- 3854 Newman, C. E., and M. I. Richardson, The impact of surface dust source ex-
3855 haustion on the martian dust cycle, dust storms and interannual variability, as
3856 simulated by the MarsWRF General Circulation Model, *Icarus*, *257*, 47–87,
3857 2015.
- 3858 Newman, C. E., S. R. Lewis, P. L. Read, and F. Forget, Modeling the Mar-
3859 tian dust cycle 1. Representations of dust transport processes, *Journal of*
3860 *Geophysical Research*, *107*, 5123, 2002a.

- Newman, C. E., S. R. Lewis, P. L. Read, and F. Forget, Modeling the Martian dust cycle 2. Multiannual radiatively active dust transport simulations, *Journal of Geophysical Research*, *107*, 5124, 2002b.
- Newman, C. E., S. R. Lewis, and P. L. Read, The atmospheric circulation and dust activity in different orbital epochs on Mars, *Icarus*, *174*, 135–160, 2005.
- Nishizawa, S., et al., Martian dust devil statistics from high-resolution large-eddy simulations, *Geophysical Research Letters*, *43*, 2016.
- Ockert-Bell, M. E., J. F. Bell III, J. B. Pollack, C. P. McKay, and F. Forget, Absorption and scattering properties of the Martian dust in the solar wavelengths, *Journal of Geophysical Research*, *102*, 9039, 1997.
- Oke, A. M. C., N. J. Tapper, and D. Dunkerley, Willy-willies in the Australian landscape: The role of key meteorological variables and surface conditions in defining frequency and spatial characteristics, *Journal of Arid Environments*, *71*, 201–215, 2007.
- Pacifici, A., G. G. Ori, F. Cannarsa, A. Murana, A. Aboudan, S. Portigliotti, A. Marcer, and L. Lorenzoni, Geological and Geomorphological Map of Exo-Mars 2016 Landing Site, *45th Lunar and Planetary Science Conference*, 2014.
- Palmer, T. N., G. J. Shutts, and R. Swinbank, Alleviation of a systematic westerly bias in general circulation and numerical weather prediction models through an orographic gravity wave drag parametrization, *Quarterly Journal of the Royal Meteorological Society*, *112*, 1001–1039, 1986.
- Pankine, A. A., and A. Ingersoll, Interannual variability of Mars global dust storms: an example of self-organized criticality?, *Icarus*, *170*, 514–518, 2004.
- Pearl, J. C., M. D. Smith, B. J. Conrath, J. L. Bandfield, and P. R. Christensen, Observations of Martian ice clouds by the Mars Global Surveyor Thermal Emission Spectrometer: The first Martian year, *Journal of Geophysical Research: Planets*, *106*, 12,325–12,338, 2001.
- Peterfreund, A. R., Visual and infrared observations of wind streaks on Mars, *Icarus*, *45*, 447–467, 1981.

- Petrosyan, A., et al., The Martian atmospheric boundary layer, *Reviews of Geophysics*, *49*, RG3005, 2011.
- Philpotts, A. R., and J. J. Ague, *Principles of igneous and metamorphic petrology*, Cambridge University Press, 2009.
- Pike, W. T., U. Staufer, M. H. Hecht, W. Goetz, D. Parrat, H. Sykulski-Lawrence, S. Vijendran, and M. B. Madsen, Quantification of the dry history of the Martian soil inferred from in situ microscopy, *Geophysical Research Letters*, *38*, L24,201, 2011.
- Pollack, J. B., D. S. Colburn, R. Kahn, J. Hunter, W. Van Camp, C. E. Carlston, and M. R. Wolf, Properties of aerosols in the Martian atmosphere, as inferred from Viking Lander imaging data, *Journal of Geophysical Research*, *82*, 4479–4496, 1977.
- Pollack, J. B., D. S. Colburn, F. M. Flasar, R. Kahn, C. E. Carlston, and D. Pidek, Properties and effects of dust particles suspended in the Martian atmosphere, *Journal of Geophysical Research*, *84*, 2929, 1979.
- Pollack, J. B., M. E. Ockert-Bell, and M. K. Shepard, Viking Lander image analysis of Martian atmospheric dust, *Journal of Geophysical Research*, *100*, 5235, 1995.
- Priestley, A., A Quasi-Conservative Version of the Semi-Lagrangian Advection Scheme, *Monthly Weather Review*, *121*, 621–629, 1993.
- Qi, J., C. Chen, and R. C. Beardsley, FVCOM one-way and two-way nesting using ESMF: Development and validation, *Ocean Modelling*, *124*, 94–110, 2018.
- Rafkin, S. C. R., A positive radiative-dynamic feedback mechanism for the maintenance and growth of Martian dust storms, *Journal of Geophysical Research*, *114*, E01,009, 2009.
- Rafkin, S. C. R., and T. I. Michaels, Meteorological predictions for 2003 Mars Exploration Rover high-priority landing sites, *Journal of Geophysical Research: Planets*, *108*, 2003.

- 3919 Rafkin, S. C. R., R. M. Haberle, and T. I. Michaels, The Mars Regional At-
 3920 mospheric Modeling System: Model Description and Selected Simulations,
 3921 *Icarus*, *151*, 228–256, 2001.
- 3922 Rafkin, S. C. R., J. Pla-Garcia, M. A. Kahre, J. Gomez-Elvira, V. E. Hamilton,
 3923 M. Marin, S. Navarro, J. Torres, and A. R. Vasavada, The meteorology of
 3924 Gale Crater as determined from Rover Environmental Monitoring Station
 3925 observations and numerical modeling. Part II: Interpretation, *Icarus*, *280*,
 3926 114–138, 2016.
- 3927 Read, P. L., and S. R. Lewis, *The Martian Climate Revisited*, Springer, Praxis
 3928 Publishing, 2004.
- 3929 Read, P. L., S. R. Lewis, and D. P. Mulholland, The physics of Martian weather
 3930 and climate: a review, *Reports on Progress in Physics*, *78*, 125,901, 2015.
- 3931 Reiss, D., M. Zanetti, and G. Neukum, Multitemporal observations of identical
 3932 active dust devils on Mars with the High Resolution Stereo Camera (HRSC)
 3933 and Mars Orbiter Camera (MOC), *Icarus*, *215*, 358–369, 2011.
- 3934 Reiss, D., N. M. Hoekzema, and O. J. Stenzel, Dust deflation by dust devils on
 3935 Mars derived from optical depth measurements using the shadow method in
 3936 HiRISE images, *Planetary and Space Science*, *93-94*, 54–64, 2014a.
- 3937 Reiss, D., A. Spiga, and G. Erkeling, The horizontal motion of dust devils on
 3938 Mars derived from CRISM and CTX/HiRISE observations, *Icarus*, *227*, 8–20,
 3939 2014b.
- 3940 Rennó, N. O., M. L. Burkett, and M. P. Larkin, A simple thermodynamical
 3941 theory for dust devils, *Journal of the Atmospheric Sciences*, *55*, 3244–3252,
 3942 1998.
- 3943 Rennó, N. O., A.-S. Wong, S. K. Atreya, I. de Pater, and M. Roos-Serote,
 3944 Electrical discharges and broadband radio emission by Martian dust devils
 3945 and dust storms, *Geophysical Research Letters*, *30*, 2140, 2003.
- 3946 Richardson, M. I., and R. J. Wilson, Investigation of the nature and stability
 3947 of the Martian seasonal water cycle with a general circulation model, *Journal*
 3948 *of Geophysical Research*, *107*, 5031, 2002.

- 3949 Ringrose, T. J., M. C. Towner, and J. C. Zarnecki, Convective vortices on Mars:
3950 a reanalysis of Viking Lander 2 meteorological data, sols 1–60, *Icarus*, 163,
3951 78–87, 2003.
- 3952 Rossow, W. B., Cloud microphysics: Analysis of the clouds of Earth, Venus,
3953 Mars and Jupiter, *Icarus*, 36, 1–50, 1978.
- 3954 Ruff, S. W., and P. R. Christensen, Bright and dark regions on Mars: Particle
3955 size and mineralogical characteristics based on Thermal Emission Spectrom-
3956 eter data, *Journal of Geophysical Research*, 107, 5127, 2002.
- 3957 Ryan, J. A., Notes on the Martian yellow clouds, *Journal of Geophysical Re-*
3958 *search*, 69, 3759–3770, 1964.
- 3959 Ryan, J. A., and J. J. Carroll, Dust devil wind velocities: Mature state, *Journal*
3960 *of Geophysical Research*, 75, 531–541, 1970.
- 3961 Schiaparelli, G. V., On some observations of Saturn and Mars, *The Observatory*,
3962 5, 221–224, 1882.
- 3963 Schwiesow, R. L., and R. E. Cupp, Remote Doppler velocity measurements of
3964 atmospheric dust devil vortices, *Applied Optics*, 15, 1976.
- 3965 Seidelmann, P. K., et al., Report of the IAU/IAG Working Group on Carto-
3966 graphic Coordinates and Rotational Elements of the Planets and Satellites:
3967 2000, *Celestial Mechanics and Dynamical Astronomy*, 82, 83–111, 2002.
- 3968 Shao, Y., and H. Lu, A simple expression for wind erosion threshold friction
3969 velocity, *Journal of Geophysical Research*, 105, 22,437, 2000.
- 3970 Shirley, J. H., Solar System dynamics and global-scale dust storms on Mars,
3971 *Icarus*, 251, 128–144, 2015.
- 3972 Simmons, A. J., and D. M. Burridge, An Energy and Angular-Momentum Con-
3973 serving Vertical Finite-Difference Scheme and Hybrid Vertical Coordinates,
3974 *Monthly Weather Review*, 109, 758–766, 1981.
- 3975 Sinclair, P. C., Some preliminary dust devil measurements, *Monthly Weather*
3976 *Review*, 92, 363–367, 1964.

- 3977 Sinclair, P. C., General characteristics of dust devils, *Journal of Applied Mete-*
3978 *orology*, 8, 32–45, 1969.
- 3979 Skamarock, W. C., and J. B. Klemp, A time-split nonhydrostatic atmospheric
3980 model for weather research and forecasting applications, *Journal of Compu-*
3981 *tational Physics*, 227, 3465–3485, 2008.
- 3982 Smith, D. E., et al., Mars Orbiter Laser Altimeter: Experiment summary after
3983 the first year of global mapping of Mars, *Journal of Geophysical Research:*
3984 *Planets*, 106, 23,689–23,722, 2001.
- 3985 Smith, M. D., Interannual variability in TES atmospheric observations of Mars
3986 during 1999–2003, *Icarus*, 167, 148–165, 2004.
- 3987 Smith, M. D., THEMIS observations of Mars aerosol optical depth from
3988 2002–2008, *Icarus*, 202, 444–452, 2009.
- 3989 Smith, M. D., J. L. Bandfield, P. R. Christensen, and M. I. Richardson, Thermal
3990 Emission Imaging System (THEMIS) infrared observations of atmospheric
3991 dust and water ice cloud optical depth, *Journal of Geophysical Research*,
3992 108, 5115, 2003.
- 3993 Smith, M. D., M. J. Wolff, R. T. Clancy, A. Kleinböhl, and S. L. Murchie, Ver-
3994 tical distribution of dust and water ice aerosols from CRISM limb-geometry
3995 observations, *Journal of Geophysical Research: Planets*, 118, 321–334, 2013.
- 3996 Smith, P. H., and M. T. Lemmon, Opacity of the Martian atmosphere measured
3997 by the Imager for Mars Pathfinder, *Journal of Geophysical Research*, 104,
3998 8975, 1999.
- 3999 Snow, J. T., and T. M. McClelland, Dust devils at White Sands Missile Range,
4000 New Mexico: 1. Temporal and spatial distributions, *Journal of Geophysical*
4001 *Research*, 95, 13,707, 1990.
- 4002 Soriano, C., O. Jorba, and J. M. Baldasano, One-Way Nesting Versus Two-Way
4003 Nesting: Does It Really Make a Difference?, in *Air Pollution Modeling and Its*
4004 *Application XV*, edited by C. Borrego and G. Schayes, pp. 177–185, Springer,
4005 2002.

- 4006 Spiga, A., LMD Martian Mesoscale Model User Manual, *Tech. rep.*, Laboratoire
4007 de Meteorologie Dynamique Universite Pierre et Marie Curie, Paris, France,
4008 2014.
- 4009 Spiga, A., and F. Forget, A new model to simulate the Martian mesoscale and
4010 microscale atmospheric circulation: Validation and first results, *Journal of*
4011 *Geophysical Research*, *114*, E02,009, 2009.
- 4012 Spiga, A., and S. R. Lewis, Martian mesoscale and microscale wind variability
4013 of relevance for dust lifting, *Mars*, *5*, 146–158, 2010.
- 4014 Spiga, A., F. Forget, S. R. Lewis, and D. P. Hinson, Structure and dynamics
4015 of the convective boundary layer on Mars as inferred from large-eddy sim-
4016 ulations and remote-sensing measurements, *Quarterly Journal of the Royal*
4017 *Meteorological Society*, *136*, 414–428, 2010.
- 4018 Spiga, A., F. Forget, J.-B. Madeleine, L. Montabone, S. R. Lewis, and E. Mil-
4019 lour, The impact of martian mesoscale winds on surface temperature and on
4020 the determination of thermal inertia, *Icarus*, *212*, 504–519, 2011.
- 4021 Spiga, A., J. Faure, J.-B. Madeleine, A. Määttänen, and F. Forget, Rocket
4022 dust storms and detached dust layers in the Martian atmosphere, *Journal of*
4023 *Geophysical Research: Planets*, *118*, 746–767, 2013.
- 4024 Stanzel, C., M. Pätzold, R. Greeley, E. Hauber, and G. Neukum, Dust devils on
4025 Mars observed by the High Resolution Stereo Camera, *Geophysical Research*
4026 *Letters*, *33*, L11,202, 2006.
- 4027 Stanzel, C., M. Pätzold, D. Williams, P. L. Whelley, R. Greeley, and G. Neukum,
4028 Dust devil speeds, directions of motion and general characteristics observed
4029 by the Mars Express High Resolution Stereo Camera, *Icarus*, *197*, 39–51,
4030 2008.
- 4031 Steakley, K., and J. R. Murphy, A year of convective vortex activity at Gale
4032 Crater, *Icarus*, 2016.
- 4033 Steele, L. J., A study of the martian water cycle and cloud radiative effects
4034 using data assimilation, Ph.D. thesis, The Open University, 2014.

- 4035 Steele, L. J., S. R. Lewis, M. R. Patel, F. Montmessin, F. Forget, and M. D.
 4036 Smith, The seasonal cycle of water vapour on Mars from assimilation of Ther-
 4037 mal Emission Spectrometer data, *Icarus*, *237*, 97–115, 2014.
- 4038 Steele, L. J., M. R. Balme, S. R. Lewis, and A. Spiga, The water cycle and
 4039 regolith–atmosphere interaction at Gale crater, Mars, *Icarus*, *289*, 56–79,
 4040 2017.
- 4041 Steele, L. J., E. S. Kite, and T. I. Michaels, Crater Mound Formation by Wind
 4042 Erosion on Mars, *Journal of Geophysical Research: Planets*, *123*, 113–130,
 4043 2018.
- 4044 Strausberg, M. J., H. Wang, M. I. Richardson, S. P. Ewald, and A. D. Toigo,
 4045 Observations of the initiation and evolution of the 2001 Mars global dust
 4046 storm, *Journal of Geophysical Research*, *110*, E02,006, 2005.
- 4047 Sullivan, R., et al., Wind-Driven Particle Mobility on Mars: Insights from MER
 4048 Observations, in *American Geophysical Union, Fall Meeting 2007*, 2007.
- 4049 Szwast, M. A., M. I. Richardson, and A. R. Vasavada, Surface dust redistribu-
 4050 tion on Mars as observed by the Mars Global Surveyor and Viking orbiters,
 4051 *Journal of Geophysical Research*, *111*, E11,008, 2006.
- 4052 Takahashi, Y. O., Y.-Y. Hayashi, M. Odaka, and W. Ohfuchi, High Resolution
 4053 Simulations of the General Circulation of the Martian Atmosphere: Small
 4054 and Medium Scale Disturbances and Dust Lifting Processes, in *Third Inter-*
 4055 *national Workshop on the Mars Atmosphere: Modeling and Observations*,
 4056 2008.
- 4057 Takahashi, Y. O., Y.-Y. Hayashi, M. Odaka, and W. Ohfuchi, High resolution
 4058 general circulation model experiments of the Martian atmosphere: resolution
 4059 dependence of disturbance and surface stress, *Fourth International Workshop*
 4060 *on the Mars Atmosphere: Modeling and Observations*, 2011a.
- 4061 Takahashi, Y. O., Y.-Y. Hayashi, M. Odaka, and W. Ohfuchi, High resolution
 4062 general circulation model experiments of the Martian atmosphere: resolution
 4063 dependence of disturbance and surface stress, in *Fourth International Work-*
 4064 *shop on the Mars Atmosphere: Modeling and Observations*, 2011b.

- 4065 Thomas, P., and P. J. Gierasch, Dust devils on Mars, *Science*, *230*, 175–7, 1985.
- 4066 Toigo, A. D., and M. I. Richardson, Meteorology of proposed Mars Exploration
4067 Rover landing sites, *Journal of Geophysical Research*, *108*, 8092, 2003.
- 4068 Toigo, A. D., M. I. Richardson, S. P. Ewald, and P. J. Gierasch, Numerical sim-
4069 ulation of Martian dust devils, *Journal of Geophysical Research*, *108*, 5047,
4070 2003.
- 4071 Toigo, A. D., C. Lee, C. E. Newman, and M. I. Richardson, The impact of reso-
4072 lution on the dynamics of the martian global atmosphere: Varying resolution
4073 studies with the MarsWRF GCM, *Icarus*, *221*, 276–288, 2012.
- 4074 Toigo, A. D., M. I. Richardson, H. Wang, S. D. Guzewich, and C. E. Newman,
4075 The cascade from local to global dust storms on Mars: Temporal and spatial
4076 thresholds on thermal and dynamical feedback, *Icarus*, *302*, 514–536, 2018.
- 4077 Tomasko, M. G., L. R. Dose, M. T. Lemmon, P. H. Smith, and E. Wegryn,
4078 Properties of dust in the Martian atmosphere from the Imager on Mars
4079 Pathfinder, *Journal of Geophysical Research*, *104*, 8987–9007, 1999.
- 4080 Toon, O. B., J. B. Pollack, and C. Sagan, Physical properties of the particles
4081 composing the Martian dust storm of 1971–1972, *Icarus*, *30*, 663–696, 1977.
- 4082 Tyler, D., and J. R. Barnes, Atmospheric mesoscale modeling of water and
4083 clouds during northern summer on Mars, *Icarus*, *237*, 388–414, 2014.
- 4084 Tyler, D., and J. R. Barnes, Convergent crater circulations on Mars: Influence
4085 on the surface pressure cycle and the depth of the convective boundary layer,
4086 *Geophysical Research Letters*, *42*, 7343–7350, 2015.
- 4087 Tyler, D., J. R. Barnes, and R. M. Haberle, Simulation of surface meteorology
4088 at the Pathfinder and VL1 sites using a Mars mesoscale model, *Journal of*
4089 *Geophysical Research*, *107*, 5018, 2002.
- 4090 Tyler, D., J. R. Barnes, and E. D. Skyllingstad, Mesoscale and large-eddy simu-
4091 lation model studies of the Martian atmosphere in support of Phoenix, *Jour-*
4092 *nal of Geophysical Research*, *113*, 2008.

- 4093 Urrego-Blanco, J., J. Sheng, and F. Dupont, Performance of One-Way and Two-
 4094 Way Nesting Techniques Using the Shelf Circulation Modelling System for the
 4095 Eastern Canadian Shelf, *Atmosphere-Ocean*, *54*, 75–92, 2016.
- 4096 Vasavada, A. R., et al., Assessment of environments for Mars Science Laboratory
 4097 entry, descent, and surface operations, *Space Science Reviews*, *170*, 793–835,
 4098 2012.
- 4099 Vaughan, A. F., J. R. Johnson, K. E. Herkenhoff, R. Sullivan, G. A. Landis,
 4100 W. Goetz, and M. B. Madsen, Pancam and Microscopic Imager observations
 4101 of dust on the Spirit Rover: Cleaning events, spectral properties, and aggre-
 4102 gates, *The Mars Journal*, *5*, 129–145, 2010.
- 4103 Wallace, J. M., and P. V. Hobbs, *Atmospheric Science: An Introductory Survey*,
 4104 second ed., Elsevier Inc., 2006.
- 4105 Wang, H., Dust storms originating in the northern hemisphere during the third
 4106 mapping year of Mars Global Surveyor, *Icarus*, *189*, 325–343, 2007.
- 4107 Wang, H., and J. A. Fisher, North polar frontal clouds and dust storms on Mars
 4108 during spring and summer, *Icarus*, *204*, 103–113, 2009.
- 4109 Wang, H., and M. I. Richardson, The origin, evolution, and trajectory of large
 4110 dust storms on Mars during Mars years 24–30 (1999–2011), *Icarus*, *251*, 112–
 4111 127, 2015.
- 4112 Wang, H., M. I. Richardson, R. J. Wilson, A. P. Ingersoll, A. D. Toigo, and
 4113 R. W. Zurek, Cyclones, tides, and the origin of a cross-equatorial dust storm
 4114 on Mars, *Geophysical Research Letters*, *30*, 1488, 2003.
- 4115 Wang, H., R. W. Zurek, and M. I. Richardson, Relationship between frontal
 4116 dust storms and transient eddy activity in the northern hemisphere of Mars
 4117 as observed by Mars Global Surveyor, *Journal of Geophysical Research*, *110*,
 4118 E07,005, 2005.
- 4119 Waterman, P. C., Matrix formulation of electromagnetic scattering, *Proceedings*
 4120 *of the IEEE*, *53*, 805–812, 1965.

- 4121 White, A. A., and A. Staniforth, A generalized thermal wind equation and
4122 some non-separable exact solutions of the flow equations for three-dimensional
4123 spherical atmospheres, *Quarterly Journal of the Royal Meteorological Society*,
4124 *134*, 1931–1939, 2008.
- 4125 Whiteway, J. A., et al., Mars water-ice clouds and precipitation., *Science (New*
4126 *York, N.Y.)*, *325*, 68–70, 2009.
- 4127 Wilson, R. J., A general circulation model simulation of the Martian polar
4128 warming, *Geophysical Research Letters*, *24*, 123–126, 1997.
- 4129 Wilson, R. J., Dust cycle modeling with the GFDL Mars General Circulation
4130 Model, in *Fourth International Workshop on the Mars Atmosphere: Modeling*
4131 *and Observations*, 2011.
- 4132 Wilson, R. J., and K. Hamilton, Comprehensive Model Simulation of Thermal
4133 Tides in the Martian Atmosphere, *Journal of the Atmospheric Sciences*, *53*,
4134 1290–1325, 1996.
- 4135 Wilson, R. J., S. R. Lewis, L. Montabone, and M. D. Smith, Influence of water
4136 ice clouds on Martian tropical atmospheric temperatures, *Geophysical Re-*
4137 *search Letters*, *35*, 2008.
- 4138 Withers, P., and R. Pratt, An observational study of the response of the upper
4139 atmosphere of Mars to lower atmospheric dust storms, *Icarus*, *225*, 378–389,
4140 2013.
- 4141 Withers, P., and M. D. Smith, Atmospheric entry profiles from the Mars Ex-
4142 ploration Rovers Spirit and Opportunity, *Icarus*, *185*, 133–142, 2006.
- 4143 Wolff, M. J., and R. T. Clancy, Constraints on the size of Martian aerosols
4144 from Thermal Emission Spectrometer observations, *Journal of Geophysical*
4145 *Research*, *108*, 5097, 2003.
- 4146 Wolff, M. J., M. D. Smith, R. T. Clancy, R. Arvidson, M. A. Kahre, F. Seelos,
4147 S. L. Murchie, and H. Savijärvi, Wavelength dependence of dust aerosol sin-
4148 gle scattering albedo as observed by the Compact Reconnaissance Imaging
4149 Spectrometer, *Journal of Geophysical Research*, *114*, E00D04, 2009.

- 4150 Wolff, M. J., R. T. Clancy, J. D. Goguen, M. C. Malin, and B. A. Cantor,
4151 Ultraviolet dust aerosol properties as observed by MARCI, *Icarus*, 208, 143–
4152 155, 2010.
- 4153 Wolff, M. J., et al., Constraints on dust aerosols from the Mars Exploration
4154 Rovers using MGS overflights and Mini-TES, *Journal of Geophysical Re-*
4155 *search*, 111, E12S17, 2006.
- 4156 Wurm, G., and O. Krauss, Dust Eruptions by Photophoresis and Solid State
4157 Greenhouse Effects, *Physical Review Letters*, 96, 134,301, 2006.
- 4158 Wurm, G., J. Teiser, and D. Reiss, Greenhouse and thermophoretic effects in
4159 dust layers: The missing link for lifting of dust on Mars, *Geophysical Research*
4160 *Letters*, 35, L10,201, 2008.
- 4161 Zalucha, A. M., The effect of dust on the Martian Hadley cells, in *Fifth Inter-*
4162 *national Workshop on the Mars Atmosphere: Modelling and Observations*,
4163 2014.
- 4164 Zurek, R. W., Solar heating of the Martian dusty atmosphere, *Icarus*, 35, 196–
4165 208, 1978.
- 4166 Zurek, R. W., The Spatial and Temporal Distribution of Dust in the Atmosphere
4167 of Mars, in *Dust in the Atmosphere of Mars*, 2017.
- 4168 Zurek, R. W., and L. J. Martin, Interannual variability of planet-encircling dust
4169 storms on Mars, *Journal of Geophysical Research*, 98, 3247–3259, 1993.
- 4170 Zurek, R. W., J. R. Barnes, R. M. Haberle, J. B. Pollack, J. E. Tillman, and
4171 C. B. Leovy, Dynamics of the Atmosphere of Mars, in *Mars*, edited by H. H.
4172 Kieffer, B. M. Jakosky, C. W. Snyder, and M. S. Matthews, chap. 26, pp.
4173 835–933, The University of Arizona Press, Tucson, 1992.